

J. F. Whiteaves.

2004

\$25.00



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation





J. Adcock sc.

Samuel Butler

THE POETICAL WORKS OF
SAMUEL BUTLER
VOLUME I



LONDON
WILLIAM PICKERING

1835

CHARLES WHITTINGHAM
LONDON

TO THE REV. WILLIAM LISLE BOWLES,

CANON OF SALISBURY, ETC.

UNHONOUR'D lay poor Butler's nameless grave,
One line, the hand of pitying friendship gave.
'Twas his with pure confiding heart to trust
The flattering minions of a monarch's lust ;
And hope that faith a private debt would own,
False to the honour of a nation's throne.

Such were the lines insulted virtue pour'd,
And such the wealth of wit's exhaustless hoard ;
Of keenest wisdom dallying with her scorn,
And playful jest of indignation born ;
And honest hatred of that godless crew,
To king, to country ;—to themselves untrue :
The hands that laid the blameless mitre low,
That gave great Wentworth to the headsman's
blow,

And their's the deed immortalized in shame,
Which raised a monarch to a martyr's name.

Oh ! friend ! with me thy thoughtful sorrows
join,

Thy heart will answer each desponding line ;
Say, when thy hand o'er KEN's neglected grave
At once the flowers of love and learning gave ;
Or when was heard, beneath each listening tree,
The lute sweet Arehimage had lent to thee :

racter of a good scholar ; but the period and place of his residence seem alike unknown, and indeed it appears doubtful whether he ever received the advantages of an academical education.

For some time he was clerk to Mr. Jefferys, of Earls Croomb, in Worcestershire, an eminent justice of the peace. He employed the ample leisure which his situation afforded in study ; while he also cultivated the arts of painting and music. “The Hogarth of Poetry,” says Walpole, “was a painter too :” his love of the pencil introduced him to the acquaintance of the celebrated Samuel Cooper.⁴ Some pictures were shown by the family as his, but we presume of no great excellence, as they were subsequently employed to stop broken windows. Dr. Nash says that he heard of a portrait of Oliver Cromwell by him. After this, he was recommended to the notice of the Countess of Kent, living at Wrest, in Bedfordshire, where he had not only the advantage of a library,⁵ but enjoyed the conversation of the most learned man of his age, the great Selden. Why he subsequently left so advantageous and honourable a situation does not appear, but we find him domesticated under the roof of Sir Samuel Luke, at Cople, or Wood end, a gentleman of a very ancient family in Bedfordshire, one of Cromwell’s officers, and a rigid Presbyterian. It is in this place and at this

⁴ Of our English poets, Flatman and George Dyer were painters. Pope also used the brush under the tuition of Jervas. I recollect no further union of the arts.

⁵ “Butler was not acquainted with the Italian poets. Of Ruggiero he might have truly asserted what he has falsely told of Rinaldo.”—See Neve on the English Poets, p. 79.

time that he is said to have commenced his celebrated poem. His patron's house afforded him a gallery of living portraits, and he was fortunately permitted to see Puritanism in one of its strong holds. The keenness of his observation secured the fidelity of his descriptions, and enabled him to fill up his outline with those rich and forcible details, which a familiar acquaintance with the originals afforded.

At the restoration of the exiled monarch, when loyalty expected the reward of its fidelity and the recompense of its losses, Butler appears to have suffered the same disappointment that met other claimants; and silently and unobtrusively retreating from the conflict of avarice and impotency,⁶ he accepted the Secretaryship to Richard,

⁶ It is supposed that Sir Samuel Luke is ridiculed under the character of Hudibras: the reason of the conjecture is founded on Hudib. P. i. c. 1. ver. 904:—

'Tis sung, there is a valiant Mamaluke,
In foreign land yclep'd — ;

and the ballad entitled "A Tale of the Cobbler and Vicar of Bray," in the posthumous works, p. 285, but this ballad is not proved to be genuine. Nash says, "he was informed by a bencher of Gray's Inn, who had it from an acquaintance of Butler's, that the person intended was Sir Henry Rosewell, of Torr Abbey, in Devonshire," but adds, "these would be probable reasons to deprive Bedfordshire of the Hero, did not Butler, in his Memoirs of 1649, give the same description of Sir Samuel Luke, and in his Dunstable Downs, expressly style Sir Samuel Luke, Sir Hudibras;" the name was borrowed from Spenser, F. Q. 11. i. 17.

He that made love unto the eldest dame
Was hight Sir Hudibras, an hardy man.

It is supposed that Lilly the astrologer was represented under the person of Sidrophel; though Sir Paul Neal, who denied Butler to be the author of Hudibras, has been mentioned as the person intended. Vide Grey's Hudibras, ii.

Earl of Carbury, Lord President of the Principality of Wales, who made him Steward of Ludlow Castle, where the court of the marches was removed. About this time, he married Mrs. Herbert,⁷ a gentlewoman of good family, but who had lost most of her fortune, by placing it on bad securities, in those very dangerous and uncertain times. A. Wood says, that he was Secretary to George, Duke of Buckingham, when he was Chancellor of Cambridge, that the Duke treated him with kindness and generosity; and that in common with almost all men of wit and learning, he enjoyed the friendship of the celebrated Earl of Dorset. The author of his Life, prefixed to his Poems, says, that the integrity of his life, the acuteness of his wit, and the easiness of his conversation, rendered him acceptable to all; but that he avoided a multiplicity of acquaintance. The accounts both of the patronage of the Duke of Buckingham and the Secretaryship are disbelieved by Dr. Johnson, on the following grounds:—"Mr. Wycherley," says Major Packe, "had always laid hold of an opportunity which offered of representing to the Duke of Buckingham how well Mr. Butler had deserved of the royal family, by writing his inimitable *Hudibras*, and that it was a reproach to the Court that a person of his

388. 105. 1st edit.; and Nash's *Hudibras*, vol. ii. p. 308. that *Whachum* was meant for Sir George Wharton, does not appear to rest on any proof; v. *Biographia*, Art. Sherborne, note (B).

⁷ A. Wood says, that she was a widow, and that Butler supported himself by her jointure, deriving nothing from the practice of the law.

loyalty and wit, should suffer in obscurity, and under the wants he did. The duke always seemed to hearken to him with attention enough, and after some time undertook to recommend his pretensions to his Majesty. Mr. Wycherley, in hopes to keep him steady to his word, obtained of his Grace to name a day, when he might introduce that modest and unfortunate poet to his new patron. At last an appointment was made, and the place of meeting was agreed to be the Roebuck. Mr. Butler and his friend attended accordingly; the duke joined them, but as the devil would have it, the door of the room where they sat was open, and his Grace, who had seated himself near it, observing a pimp of his acquaintance (the creature too was a knight) trip by with a brace of ladies, immediately quitted his engagement to follow another kind of business, at which he was more ready than to do good offices to those of desert, though no one was better qualified than he, both in regard to his fortune and understanding, to protect them; and from that time to the day of his death, poor Butler never found the least effect of his promise."

This story may be believed or not; to me, I confess, it appears more like a well-dressed fiction of Wycherley's than the truth; why the accidental interruption of the interview should never after have been repaired, does not appear; but there is a better testimony in some verses of Butler, which were published by Mr. Thyer: "which are written (says Johnson) with a degree of acrimony, such as neglect and disappointment might naturally excite, and such as it would be hard to ima-

gine Butler capable of expressing against a man who had any claim to his gratitude.”

In 1663, the first part of *Hudibras*, in three cantos, was published,⁸ when more than fifty years had matured the author's genius, and given large scope to his experience of mankind. It was speedily known at court, through the influence of the Earl of Dorset.⁹ The king praised, the courtiers, of course, admired, and the royalists greeted a production which certainly covered their now fallen enemies with all the derision and contempt, which wit and genius could command. In 1664, the second part appeared ; and the author, as well as the public, watched with anxiety for the reward which he was to receive from the gratitude of the king ; like the other expectants of Charles's bounty, which was drained off into very different channels, they watched in vain. Clarendon, says Wood, gave him reason to hope for places and employments of value and credit, but he never received them ; and the story of the king's presenting him with a purse of three hundred guineas appears also to rest on no competent authority. To compensate for the neglect of the court, and of a king, who, in truth, cared for no one but himself, and who possessed neither public honour, nor private principle, it is difficult to

⁸ Some verses in the first edition of *Hudibras* were afterwards omitted for reasons of state, as

Did not the learned Glynne and Maynard,
To make good subjects traitors, strain hard.
Was not the king, by proclamation,
Declared a traitor through the nation.

⁹ See Prior's Dedication to his Poems.

say, whether Butler may have been satisfied with the approbation of the people; or how far the love of his art, confidence in his own genius, and a natural fondness for a successful production, may have induced him to continue his poem; certainly in four years more he published the third part, which still leaves the work unfinished. What he ultimately intended, it is impossible to conjecture from a narrative which has no consistent plan, or progress. He may have been wearied of it, or he may not have had time to continue it; for he died two years after its appearance, on the 25th of September, in the year 1680;¹ and was buried very privately by his friend Mr. Longueville, in the church-yard of St. Paul, Covent-Garden, at his private expense; for he had in vain solicited an honourable and public funeral in Westminster Abbey. About seven or eight persons followed his remains. His grave, which, according to his desire, was six feet deep, was at the west-end of the church-yard on the north side; and the burial service was read over him by the learned Dr. Patrick, then minister of the parish, and afterwards Bishop of Ely. Dr. Johnson says, that Mr. Lowndes of the Treasury, informed Dr. Zachary Pearce,² that

¹ A. Wood says he died of a consumption; Oldham says he was carried off by a fever; but as he was near fourscore, we may be spared any further investigation. Mr. Longueville says he lived for some years in Rose Street, Covent Garden, and probably died there: that notwithstanding his disappointments he was never reduced to want or beggary, and that he did not die in any person's debt.

² See Granger's Biog. Hist. of England, vol. iv. p. 40.

Butler was allowed a yearly pension of a hundred pounds; but this, as Johnson says, is contradicted by all tradition, by the complaints of Oldham,³ and the reproaches of Dryden. About sixty years after, Mr. Barber, whose name is familiar to all persons conversant with the literature of that time, who was printer and mayor of London, erected a monument in Westminster Abbey to the poet's memory; the inscription will prove how warmly he approved his principles.

M. S.

SAMUELIS BUTLERI,

Qui Strenshamiæ in agro Vigorn. nat. 1612,
obiit Lond. 1680.

Vir doctus imprimis, acer, integer;
Operibus ingenii, non item præmiis fœlix:
Satyrici apud nos carminis artifex egregius;
Quo simulatæ religionis larvam detraxit,
Et perduellium scelera liberrime exagitavit;
Scriptorum in suo genere, primus et postremus.
Ne, cui vivo deerant ferè omnia,
Deessit etiam mortuo tumulus,
Hoc tandem posito marmore, curavit
Johannes Barber, civis Londinensis, 1721.⁴

After his death, three small volumes were published bearing the title of his posthumous pieces in

³ See Oldham's 'Satire against Poetry,' and Dryden's 'Hind and Panther,' and Otway's 'Prologue to the Tragedy of Constantine the Great.' Butler twice transcribed the following distich in his Common-place Book:

To think how *Spenser* died, how *Cowley* mourn'd,
How *Butler's* faith and service were return'd.

⁴ In the additions to Pope's works, published by George Stevens, i. p. 13, are some lines said to be written by Pope on this monument erected by Barber.

Respect to Dryden Sheffield justly paid,
And noble Villars honour'd Cowley's shade.

verse and prose ;⁵ they are, however, all spurious, except the ode on Duval and two of the prose tracts : but the volumes subsequently given to the world by Mr. Thyer, keeper of the public library at Manchester, are genuine⁶ and valuable. “ As to these *remains* of Butler,” says Warburton in his Letters (cxxx), “ they are certainly his ; but they would not strike the public, if that public was honest ; but the public is a malicious monster, which cares not what it affords to dead merit, so

But whence this Barber ? that a name so mean
Should, join'd with Butler's, on a tomb be seen ;
The pyramid would better far proclaim
To future ages humbler Settle's name ;
Poet and patron then had been well pair'd,
The city printer and the city bard.

The lines also by Samuel Wesley are well known (vide Poems, 4to. 1736, p. 62.)

While Butler, needy wretch, was yet alive,
No generous patron would a dinner give ;
See him, when starved to death and turn'd to dust,
Presented with a monumental bust.
The poet's fate is here in emblem shown,
He ask'd for bread, and he received a stone.

⁵ See Delineation of Butler's Monument in Dart's Westminster Abbey, pl. 3, tom. 1, pp. 78, 79. With regard to the monument erected in 1786, when the church was repaired, at the expense of some of the parishioners, on the south side of the church (inside) with the inscription, see Nash's Life of Butler, xiii. See engraving of it in Nash's Life of Butler, p. xxxix. An engraving of the monument in Westminster Abbey is in the same work, p. 678.

⁶ What genuine remains of Butler Thyer did *not* publish, were all in the hands either of Dr. R. Farmer or Dr. Nash, and had been seen by Atterbury. See Life by Nash, xvi. James Massey, Esq. of Rosthern, Cheshire, had Butler's Common Place Book. Some law cases from Coke upon Littleton, drawn up in Norman-French by Butler, were bought by Dr. Nash of Butler's relation in Buckinghamshire. He had also a French dictionary compiled by him, and part of a tragedy of Nero.

it can but depress the living. There was something singular in this same Butler; besides an infinite deal of wit, he had great sense and penetration, both in the sciences and in the world. Yet with all this, he could never plan a work or tell a story well. The first appears from his *Hudibras*; the other from his *Elephant in the Moon*. He evidently appears to be dissatisfied with it, by turning it into long verse, but that was his forte; the fault lay in the manner of telling, not but he might have another reason for trying his talents at heroic verse—emulation. Dryden had burst out in a surprising manner; and, in such a case, the poetic world, as we have seen by a late instance, is always full of imitations. But Butler's heroics are poor stuff; indeed only doggerel made languid by heavy expletives. This attempt in the change of his measure was the sillier, not only as he acquired the mastery in the short measure, but as that measure, somehow or other, suits best with his sort of wit. His characters are full of cold puerilities, though intermixed with abundance of wit and with a great deal of good sense. He is sometimes wonderfully fine both in his sentiment and expression, as when he defines "the Proud Man to be a Fool in fermentation;" and when speaking of the Antiquary, he says, "he has a great veneration for words that are stricken in years and are grown so aged that they have outlived their employments:" but the great fault in these characters is that they are a bad and false species of composition.⁷ As for his editor

⁷ See some excellent observations on this style of writing in *Retrospect. Rev.* vol. iii. art. iv. 'Fuller's Church History.'

he is always in the wrong when there was a possibility of his mistaking. I could not but smile at his detecting Pope's plagiarisms about the Westphalia hogs, when I reflected, that in a very little time, when the chronology is not well attended to, your fine note about the ambergris will be understood by every one as a ridicule upon it; and, indeed, an excellent one it is: notwithstanding, I wish this fellow would give us a new edition of *Hudibras*, for the reason he mentions."

A. Wood ascribed to Butler two pamphlets, supposed, he says, falsely to be William Pryn's. The one entitled "*Mola Asinaria*," or the unreasonable and insupportable Burden pressed upon the Shoulders of this groaning Nation. London, 1659, in one sheet 4to. The other, *Two Letters*; one from John Audland, a quaker, to William Pryn; the other, Pryn's Answer; in three sheets in folio, 1672. The author of his life also adds, that he had seen a small poem, of one sheet in quarto, on Duval the highwayman, said to be written by Butler. These formed part of the posthumous pieces above mentioned; to which may be added the fragment given to Mr. Aubrey by the poet himself, and printed by the writer of his life. It is said that Butler did not shine in conversation till he had taken a cheerful glass, though he was no intemperate drinker. The following story is told in the *British Biography*:—"Before he (Butler) was personally known to the Earl of Dorset, that nobleman had a great desire to spend an evening with him as a private gentleman; and with that view prevailed on Mr. Thetwood Shepherd to introduce him into his company

at a tavern which they used, in the character only of a common friend. This being done, Mr. Butler, we are told, whilst the first bottle was drinking, appeared very flat and heavy, at the second bottle extremely brisk and lively, full of wit and learning, and a most pleasant agreeable companion, but before the third bottle was finished sunk again into such stupidity and dulness, that hardly any body could have believed him to be the author of *Hudibras*, a book abounding with so much wit, learning, and pleasantry. Next morning Mr. Shepherd asked his lordship's opinion of Mr. Butler, who answered, 'He is like a nine-pin, little at both ends, but great in the middle.'⁸ Johnson sums up the personal history of the poet by saying, 'In this mist of obscurity passed the life of Butler, a man whose name can only perish with his language.' The date of his birth is doubtful, the mode and place of his education are unknown, the events of his life are variously related, and all that can be told with certainty is that he was poor."

A list of the portraits of Butler, in painting and engraving, may be found in Granger's *History of England*;⁹ a portrait of him by Lely is in the Picture Gallery at Oxford; and another, by the same hand, formerly in the possession of Mr. Longueville, became the property of Mr. Hayter of Salisbury. Another likeness of him by Zoort, was formerly in the collection of the celebrated Mr. Charles Jennins. Several prints of him by

⁸ A. Wood says, "Butler was a boon and witty companion, especially among the company he knew well."

⁹ See vol. iv. p. 38, &c. A mezzotint print of Lord Grey has been altered to Butler.

Vertue are also prefixed to different editions of his works.

The merit of *Hudibras* (it has been well observed),¹ certainly lies in its style and execution, and by no means in the structure of the story. The action of the poem as it stands, and interrupted as it is, occupies but three days, and it is clear from the opening line, 'When civil dudgeon first grew high,' that it was meant to bear date with the civil wars. Yet after two days and nights are completed, the Poet skips at once, in the third part, to Oliver Cromwell's death, and then returns to retrieve his hero, and conduct him through the last canto. Before the third part of *Hudibras* appeared, a great space of time had elapsed, since the publication of the first. Charles the Second had been fifteen years asleep on the throne, and Butler seems to have felt that the ridicule of the sectaries was a stale subject. The final interest of the piece, therefore, dwindles into the Widow's repulse of Sir *Hudibras*, a topic which has been suspected to allude not so much to the Presbyterians, as to the reigning monarch's dotage upon his mistresses. "Burlesque," says Shenstone, "may perhaps be divided into such as turns chiefly on the thought and such as depends more on the expression, or we may add a third

¹ See Campbell's *Specimens of Br. Poets*, vol. iv. p. 205. The principal actions of the poem, says Nash, are four. 1. *Hudibras's* victory over *Crowdero*. 2. *Trulla's* victory over *Hudibras*. 3. *Hudibras's* victory over *Sidrophel*. 4. The Widow's antimasquerade. The rest is made up of the adventures of the Bear, of the *Skimmington*, *Hudibras's* conversations with the Lawyer and *Sidrophel*, and his long disputations with *Ralpho* and the Widow.

kind, consisting in thoughts ridiculously dressed, in language much above or below their dignity. The *Splendid Shilling* of Phillips, and the *Hudibras* of Butler are the most obvious instances. Butler, however, depended much on the ludicrous effect of his double rhymes; in other respects, to declare your sentiments, he is rather a witty writer, than a humorous one.”² The defect of Butler’s poem undoubtedly consists, in what has been already mentioned,—the poverty of the incidents, and the incompleteness and irregularity of the design. The slender strain of narrative which is just visible in the commencement,³ soon dwindles away and is lost. It is true that the poem abounds with curious and uncommon learning, with original thoughts, happy images, quaint and comic turns of expression, and new and fanciful rhymes. But the humour, instead of being diffused quietly and unostentatiously over the whole poem, in rich harmonious colouring, is collected into short epigrammatic sentences, pointed apothegms, and unexpected allusions. It has the same merits and defects as a poem of a very different kind—*Young’s Night Thoughts*,—copious invention, new and pleasing images, and brilliant thoughts; with a want of sufficient connexion in the subject, and

² Shenstone’s Works, vol. ii. p. 132, third ed.

³ “ Butler set out on too narrow a plan, and even that design is not kept up. He sinks into little true particulars about the Widow, &c. The enthusiastic Knight, and the ignorant Squire, over religious in two different ways, and always quarrelling together, is the chief point of view in it.”—(Pope) v. Spence’s Anecdotes, p. 203. It appears from some passages in Warburton’s Correspondence, that *Gray* did not much admire this poem of Butler’s.

progress in the story. There is no poem at all resembling Hudibras in character in our language ; but parts of it are not dissimilar to the style and manner of some prose writings of the time, which were published under the name of ‘ Characters,’ and which, like Butler’s poem, dazzle rather than delight by successive flashes of wit, and a rapid play of fancy. It may be observed that the defects and merits of this work are *practically* made known by the manner in which it is read. Its want of story and incident seldom permits a continued perusal ; while the abundance of its wise⁴ and witty sayings insures a constant recurrence to its pages. As little can be added to the character of the work which Johnson has given, and as it would be presumptuous to hope to express his thoughts in any language but his own, we shall conclude with extracting from his Life of Butler the following critical opinion of his work.

“ The poem of Hudibras is one of those compositions of which a nation may justly boast ; as the images which it exhibits are domestic, the sentiments unborrowed and unexpected, and the strain of diction original and peculiar. We must not, however, suffer the pride, which we assume as the countrymen of Butler, to make any encroachment upon justice, nor appropriate those honours which others have a right to share. The poem of Hudibras is not wholly English ; the

⁴ “ Though scarcely any author was ever able to express his thoughts in so few *words* as Butler, he often employs too many thoughts on one subject, and thus becomes prolix after an unusual manner.—See Hume’s Hist. of England, vol. viii. p. 337.

original idea is to be found in the history of Don Quixote; a book to which a mind of the greatest powers may be indebted without disgrace. Cervantes shows a man, who having by the incessant perusal of incredible tales, subjected his understanding⁵ to his imagination, and familiarized his mind by pertinacious meditation to trains of incredible events and scenes of impossible existence; goes out in the pride of knighthood to redress wrongs and defend virgins, to rescue captive princesses, and tumble usurpers from their thrones, attended by a squire, whose cunning, too low for the suspicion of a generous mind, enables him often to cheat his master.

“The hero of Butler is a presbyterian justice, who, in the confidence of legal authority and the rage of zealous ignorance, ranges the country to repress superstition and correct abuses, accompanied by an *independent* clerk, disputatious and obstinate, with whom he often debates, but never conquers him.

“Cervantes had so much kindness for Don Quixote, that, however he embarrasses him with absurd distresses, he gives him so much sense and virtue, as may preserve our esteem. Wherever he is or whatever he does, he is made by matchless dexterity, commonly ridiculous, but never contemptible.

“But for poor Hudibras, his poet had no tenderness, he chooses not that any pity should be shewn, or respect paid him. He gives him up at once to laughter and contempt, without any

⁵ Would not “reason” be the more proper word? .

quality that can dignify or protect him. In forming the character of Hudibras, and describing his person and habiliments, the author seems to labour with a tumultuous confusion of dissimilar ideas. He had read the history of the mock knights-errant, he knew the notions and manners of a Presbyterian magistrate, and tried to unite the absurdities of both, however distant, in one personage.⁶ Thus he gives him that pedantic ostentation of knowledge, which has no relation to chivalry, and loads him with martial encumbrances, that can add nothing to his civil dignity. He sends him out a *colonelling*, and yet never brings him within sight of war. If Hudibras be considered as the representative of the Presbyterians, it is not easy to say why his weapons should be represented as ridiculous or useless; for whatever judgment might be passed on their knowledge, or their arguments, experience had sufficiently shown that their swords were not to be despised. The hero, thus compounded of swagger and pedant, of knight and justice, is led

⁶ "One great object," says Nash, "of our Poet's satire, is to unmask the hypocrite and to exhibit in a light at once odious and ridiculous, the Presbyterians and Independents, and all other sects, which in our Poet's days amounted to near two hundred, and were enemies to the king; but his further view was to banter all the false and erase all the suspicious pretences to learning that prevailed in his time, such as astrology, sympathetic medicine, alchymy, transfusion of blood, trifling experimental philosophy, fortune-telling, incredible relations of travellers, false wit and injudicious affectation of ornament to be found in the poets, romance writers; thus he frequently alludes to Purchas's Pilgrims, Sir K. Digby's books, Bulwar's Artificial Changeling, Brown's Vulgar Errors, Burton's Melancholy, the early Transactions of the Royal Society, &c."

forth to action, with his Squire Ralpho, an independant enthusiast. Of the contexture of events planned by the author, which is called the action of the poem, since it is left imperfect, no judgment can be made. It is probable that the hero was to be led through many luckless adventures, which would give occasion, like his attack upon the Bear and Fiddle, to expose the ridiculous rigour of the sectaries, like his encounter with Sidrophel and Whachum to make superstition and credulity contemptible; or like his recourse to the low retailer of the law, discover the fraudulent practices of different professions.

“ What series of events he would have formed, or in what manner he would have rewarded or punished his hero, it is now vain to conjecture. His work must have had, it seems, the defect which Dryden imputes to Spenser, the action could not have been one: those could only have been a succession of incidents, each of which might have happened without the rest, and which could not all co-operate to any single conclusion. The discontinuity of the action might, however, have been easily forgiven; if there had been action enough, but I believe every reader regrets the paucity of events, and complains that in the poem of Hudibras, as in the History of Thucydides, there is more said than done. The scenes are too seldom changed, and the attention is tired with long conversation. It is indeed much more easy to form dialogues than to contrive adventures. Every position makes way for an argument, and every objection dictates an answer. When two disputants are engaged on a

complicated and extensive question, the difficulty is not to continue, but to end the controversy. But whether it be, that we comprehend but few of the possibilities of life, or that life itself affords little variety, every man who has tried, knows how much labour it will cost to form such a combination of circumstances as shall have at once the grace of novelty and credibility, and delight fancy without violence to reason. Perhaps the dialogue of this poem is not perfect. Some power of engaging the attention might have been added to it, by quicker reciprocation, by seasonable interruptions, by sudden questions, and by a nearer approach to dramatic spriteliness; without which, fictitious speeches will always tire, however sparkling with sentences, and however variegated with allusions. The great source of pleasure is variety. Uniformity must tire at last, though it be an uniformity of excellence. We love to expect, and when expectation is disappointed, or gratified, we want to be again expecting. For this impatience of the present, whoever would please must make provision. The skilful writer, *irritat, mulcet*, makes a due distribution of the still and animated parts. It is for want of this artful intertexture, and those necessary changes, that the whole of a book may be tedious, though all the parts are praised.

If inexhaustible wit could give perpetual pleasure, no eye could ever leave half-read the work of Butler; for what poet has ever brought so many remote images so happily together? It is scarcely possible to peruse a page without finding some association of images that was never found before.

By the first paragraph the reader is amused, by the next he is delighted, and by a few more strained to astonishment, but astonishment is a toilsome pleasure. He is soon weary of wandering, and longs to be diverted.

Omnia vult belle Matho dicere, dic aliquando
Et bene, dic neutrum, dic aliquando male.

Imagination is useless without knowledge; nature gives in vain the power of combination, unless study and observation supply materials to be combined. Butler's treasures of knowledge appear proportioned to his expense. Whatever topic employs his mind, he shews himself qualified to expand and illustrate it with all the accessories that books can furnish. He is found not only to have travelled the beaten road, but the bye paths of literature; not only to have taken general surveys, but to have examined particulars with minute inspection. If the French boast the learning of Rabelais, we need not be afraid of confronting them with Butler. But the most valuable parts of his performance are those which retired study and native wit cannot supply. He that merely makes a book from books may be useful, but can scarcely be great. Butler had not suffered life to glide by him unseen or unobserved. He had watched with great diligence the operations of human nature, and traced the effects of opinion, humour, interest, and passion. From such remarks proceeded that great number of sententious distichs, which have passed into conversation, and are added as proverbial axioms to the general stock of practical knowledge. When any work

has been viewed and admired, the first question of intelligent curiosity is, how was it performed? Hudibras was not a hasty effusion; it was not produced by a sudden tumult of imagination, or a short paroxysm of violent labour. To accumulate such a mass of sentiments at the call of accidental desire, or of sudden necessity, is beyond the reach and power of the most active and comprehensive mind. I am informed by Mr. Thyer, of Manchester, that excellent editor of this author's reliques, that he could show something like Hudibras in prose. He has in his possession the common-place book in which Butler repositied not such events and precepts as are gathered by reading, but such remarks, similitudes, allusions, assemblages, or inferences, as occasion prompted, or meditation produced, those thoughts that were generated in his own mind, and might be usefully applied to some future purpose. Such is the labour of those who write for immortality:⁷ but human works are not easily found without a perishable part. Of the ancient poets every

⁷ Butler crowds into his confined circle all the treasures of art and the accumulations of learning. He gives full measure to his readers, heaped up and running over. Thought crowds upon thought, and witticism on witticism, in rapid and dazzling succession. Every topic and every incident is made the most of: his bye-play always tells. Many of his happiest sallies appear to escape him as if by accident. Many of his hardest hits appear to be merely chance-blows. A description of a bear-ward brings in a sneer at Sir K. Digby, and his powder of sympathy; and an account of a tinker's doxy introduces a pleasantry on Sir W. Davenant's Gondibert. There is always an under-current of satiric allusion beneath the main stream of his satire. The juggling of astrology, the besetting folly of alchymy, the transfusion of blood, the sympathetic medi-

reader feels the mythology tedious and oppressive ; of Hudibras, the manners being founded on opinions, are temporary and local, and therefore become every day less intelligible and less striking. What Cicero says of philosophy is true likewise of wit and humour, that time effaces the fictions of opinion, and confirms the determinations of nature. Such manners as depend upon standing relations and general passions are co-extended with the race of man ; but those modifications of life and peculiarities of practice, which are the progeny of error and perverseness, or at best, of some accidental influence, or transient persuasion, must perish with their parents. Much, therefore, of that humour which transported the last century with merriment is lost to us, who do not know the sour solemnity, the sullen superstition, the gloomy moroseness, and the stubborn scruples of the ancient Puritans ; or, if we knew them, derive our information only from books, or from tradition ; have never had them before our eyes, and cannot but by recollection and study understand the lines in which they are satirized. Our grand-

cines, the learned trifling of experimental philosophers, the knavery of fortune-tellers, and the folly of their dupes, the marvellous relations of travellers, the subtleties of the school divines, the freaks of fashion, the fantastic extravagancies of lovers, the affectations of piety, and the absurdities of romance, are interwoven with his subject, and soften down and relieve his dark delineation of fanatical violence and perfidy. * * Butler was by no means deficient in humour, but it is cast into a dim eclipse by the predominance of his wit. His characters do not show themselves off unconsciously as fools or coxcombs : they are set up as marks at which the author levels all the shafts of his ridicule and sarcasm. *v. Retrospect. Rev. vol. iii. p. 333.*

fathers knew the picture from the life ; we judge of the life by contemplating the picture.

“ It is scarcely possible, in the regularity and composure of the present time, to image the tumult of absurdity and clamour of contradiction, which perplexed doctrine, disordered practice, and disturbed both public and private quiet, in that age when subordination was broken, and awe was hissed away ; when any unsettled innovator, who could hatch a half-formed notion, produced it to the public ; when every man might become a preacher, and almost every preacher could collect a congregation. The wisdom of the nation is very reasonably supposed to reside in the parliament ; what can be concluded of the lower classes of the people, when in one of the parliaments summoned by Cromwell, it was seriously proposed, that all the records in the Tower should be burned, that all memory of things passed should be effaced, and that the whole system of life should commence anew ! We have never been witnesses of animosities excited by the use of mince pies and plum porridge, nor seen with what abhorrence those who could eat them at all other times of the year, should shrink from them in December. An old Puritan, who was alive in my childhood, being at one of the feasts of the Church, invited by a neighbour to partake his cheer, told him that if he would treat him at an alehouse with beer brewed for all times and seasons, he should accept his kindness, but would have none of his superstitious meats and drinks. One of the puritanical tenets was the illegality of all games of chance, and he that reads Gataker upon Lots, may see how much learn-

ing and reason one of the first scholars of his age thought necessary to prove that it was no crime to throw a die, or play at cards, or hide a shilling for the reckoning. Astrology, however, against which so much of the satire is directed, was not more the folly of the puritans than of others; it had in that time a very extensive dominion; its predictions raised hopes and fears in minds which ought to have rejected it with contempt. In hazardous undertakings care was taken to begin under the influence of a propitious planet; and when the king was prisoner in Carisbrook Castle, an astrologer was consulted what hour would be found most favourable to an escape. What effect this Poem had upon the public, whether it shamed imposture, or reclaimed credulity, is not easily determined, cheats can seldom stand long against laughter; it is certain that the credit of planetary intelligence wore fast away, though some men of knowledge, and Dryden among them, continued to believe that conjunctions and oppositions had a great part in the distribution of good or evil, and in the government of sublunary things.

“ Poetical action ought to be probable upon certain suppositions; and such probability as burlesque requires is here violated only by one incident. Nothing can show more plainly the necessity of doing something, and the difficulty of finding something to do, than that Butler was reduced to transfer to his hero the flagellation of Sancho, not the most agreeable fiction of Cervantes, very suitable indeed to the manners of that age and nation, which ascribed wonderful efficacy to voluntary penances; but so remote from the

practice and opinions of the Hudibrastic time, that judgment and imagination are alike offended. The diction of this poem is grossly familiar, and the numbers purposely neglected, except in a few places where the thoughts by their native excellence secure themselves from violation, being such as mean language cannot express. The mode of versification has been blamed by Dryden, who regrets that the heroic measure was not rather chosen. To the critical sentence of Dryden the highest reverence would be due, were not his decisions often precipitate, and his opinions immature. When he wished to change the measure, he probably would have been willing to change more. If he intended that when the numbers were heroic, the diction should still remain vulgar, he planned a very heterogeneous and unnatural composition. If he preferred a general stateliness both of sound and words, he can only be understood to wish Butler had undertaken a different work. The measure is quick, sprightly, and colloquial, suitable to the vulgarity of the words, and the levity of the sentiments, but such numbers and such diction can gain regard only when they are used by a writer whose vigour of fancy and copiousness of knowledge entitle him to contempt of ornaments, and who in confidence of the novelty and justness of his conceptions, can afford to throw metaphors and epithets away. To another that conveys common thoughts in careless versification, it will only be said, 'Pauper videri Cinna vult, et est pauper.' The meaning and diction will be worthy of each other, and criticism may justly doom them to perish together.

Nor even though another Butler should arise, would another Hudibras obtain the same regard. Burlesque consists in a disproportion between the style and the sentiments, or between the adventitious sentiments and the fundamental subject. It, therefore, like all bodies compounded of heterogeneous parts, contains in it a principle of corruption. All disproportion is unnatural, and from what is unnatural we can derive only the pleasure which novelty produces. We admire it awhile as a strange thing; but when it is no longer strange we perceive its deformity. It is a kind of artifice which by frequent repetition detects itself: and the reader, learning in time what he is to expect, lays down his book, as the spectator turns away from a second exhibition of those tricks, of which the only use is to show they can be played.”

NOTES.

Page ix. On Sir Samuel Luke being represented by Hudibras, see Dr. Grey's Preface, p. iv, where by a reverend and learned person, *Warburton* is meant, see D'Israeli's *Curiosities of Literature* (new series), vol. i. p. 235, on this point. The *Grub Street Journal* says, one Col. Rolle, a Devonshire man. The old tutelary saint of Devonshire was Hugh de Bras, see *Edinburgh Review*, No. LXVII. 159. The author of a curious article in the *Censor*, No. XVI. (v. *Gent. Mag.*) called "Memoirs of Sir Samuel Luke," observes, An unauthenticated story prevails that Butler once lived in the service of Sir Samuel Luke, and has increased with a succession of writers, like a rolling ball of snow. Wood and Aubrey, who had both access to credible information, say nothing about it; and it first occurs in an anonymous life prefixed to his poems. Towneley, in his *Memoir*, insinuates that he behaved with ingratitude; 'Il me semble qu'il doit épargner le chevalier Luke, son bienfaiteur, que la gratitude et la reconnaissance auroient du mettre a couvert contre les traits de la satire de votre auteur.' But for the climax of this representation we are indebted to the *Edinb. Review* (Art. Hogg's *Jacobite Relics*), in which the critic roundly asserts that "Butler lived in the family, supported by the bounty of Sir Samuel Luke, one of Cromwell's captains, at the very time he planned his *Hudibras*, of which he was pleased to make his kind friend and hospitable patron the Hero." Now (he continues) we defy the history of whiggism to match this anecdote, or to produce so choice a specimen of the human nettle!

P. xii. Gratitude of the king.] According to the verses in Butler's 'Hudibras at Court,' (v. Remains).

Now you must know, Sir Hudibras
 With such perfections gifted was,
 And so peculiar in his manner,
 That all that saw him, did him honor.
 Among the rest this prince was one
 Admired his conversation.
 This prince, whose ready wit and parts
 Conquer'd both men and women's hearts :
 Was so o'ercome with Knight and Ralph,
 That he could never clear it off.
 He never eat, nor drank, nor slept,
 But Hudibras still near him kept ;
 Nor would he go to church, or so,
 But Hudibras must with him go.
 Nor yet to visit concubine,
 Or at a city feast to dine ;
 But Hudibras must still be there,
 Or all the fat was in the fire.
 Now after all, was it not hard
 That he should meet with no reward,
 That fitted out this Knight and Squire,
 This monarch did so much admire ;
 That he should never reimburse
 The man for th' equipage and horse,
 Is sure a strange ungrateful thing
 In any body but a king ;
 But this good king, it seems, was told
 By some that were with him too bold,
 If e'er you hope to gain your ends,
 Caress your foes, and trust your friends.
 Such were the doctrines that were taught,
 Till this unthinking king was brought
 To leave his friends to starve and die,
 A poor reward for loyalty.

Oldham, in his Satire against Poetry, writes thus :

On Butler, who can think without just rage,
 The glory and the scandal of the age.
 Fair stood his hopes, when first he came to town,
 Met every where with welcomes of renown.
 Courted and loved by all, with wonder read,
 And promises of princely favour fed.
 But what reward for all had he at last,
 After a life in dull expectance past.

The wretch, at summing up his misspent days,
 Found nothing left but poverty and praise.
 Of all his gains by verse he could not save
 Enough to purchase flannel and a grave.
 Reduced to want, he in due time fell sick,
 Was fain to die, and be interred on tick,
 And well might bless the fever that was sent
 To rid him thence, and his worse fate prevent.

And Dryden, in the Hind and Panther :

Unpitied Hudibras, your champion friend
 Has shown how far your charities extend.
 This lasting verse shall on his tomb be read,
 He shamed you living, and upbraids you dead.

P. xiv. Epitaph on Butler, by John Dennis, never before published, in D'Israeli's *Curiosities of Literature*, (new series), vol. i. p. 240.

Near this place lies interred
 The body of Mr. S. Butler,
 Author of Hudibras.
 He was a whole species of poets in one,
 Admirable in a manner,
 In which no one else has been tolerable ;
 A manner which began and ended with him,
 In which he knew no guide,
 And found no followers.

P. xxi. On the versification of Hudibras, see Dryden's *Ded. to Juvenal*, 1735, p. 100 ; to which Johnson alludes. See also Addison's *Spectator*, vol. i. No. ix. See also Prior's *Alma*, (c. ii. imit).

But shall we take the muse abroad,
 To drop her idly on the road ?
 And leave our subject in the middle,
 As Butler did his bear and fiddle ?
 Yet he, consummate master, knew
 When to recede and when pursue.
 His noble negligences teach
 What others toils despair to reach.
 He, perfect dancer, climbs the rope,
 And balances your fear and hope ;

If, after some distinguish'd leap,
He drops his pole, and seems to slip,
Straight gathering all his active strength,
He rises higher half his length.
With wonder you approve his slight,
And owe your pleasure to your fright.
But like poor Andrew I advance,
False mimic of my master's dance.
Around the cord a while I sprawl,
And thence, though low, in earnest fall.

APPENDIX.

I. BUTLER'S *Hudibras*; the first part printed by T. G. for Richard Marriott, under St. Dunstan's Church, Fleet Street, 1663, 8vo. p. 268.¹ In the *Mercurius Aulicus*, Jan. 1-8, 1662, is an advertisement.—There is stolen abroad a most false and imperfect copy of *Hudibras*, without name, either of printer or bookseller; the true and perfect edition printed by the author's original, is sold by Richard Marriott, near St. Dunstan's Church, in Fleet Street. That other nameless impression is a cheat, and will but abuse the buyer as well as the author, whose poem deserves to have fallen into better hands.

II. *Hudibras*, the second part, 1663. This spurious second part was published after Butler had printed his first part, and before he printed the second, and is very scarce. It ran through three editions in the same year; the first two do not differ except in the type. But there was another edition still, "*Hudibras*, the second part, with the continuation of the third canto, to which is added a fourth canto."

Hudibras; the second part, by the author of the first; printed by T. R. for John Martyn and James Allestrey, at the Bell, in St. Paul's Church-yard, 1664, 8vo. and 12mo. It has on the title page a wood-cut, with the publishers'

¹ I have also met with '*Mercurius Menippeus*, the Loyal Satirist, or *Hudibras* in Prose; written by an unknown hand, in the time of the late rebellion, but never till now published, 1682,' a curious tract.

device, a bell, and the letters at bottom, M. A. In the *Mercurius Publicus* for Nov. 20, 1663, is this very singular advertisement.—“Newly published, the second part of *Hudibras*, by the author of the former, which (if possible) has outdone the first.”—In the B. Museum (Misc. Pap. Bibl. Birch. No. 4293), is the following injunction:—Charles R., our will and pleasure is, and we do hereby strictly charge and command, that no printer, bookseller, stationer, or other person, whatsoever within our kingdom of England, or Ireland, do print, reprint, utter, or sell, or cause to be printed; reprinted, uttered, or sold, a book or poem, called *Hudibras*, or any part thereof, without the consent and approbation of Samuel Boteler, Esq. or his assigns, as they, and every of them will answer the contrary at their perils. Given at our Court at Whitehall, the 10th day of September, in the year of our Lord God, 1677, and in the 29th year of our reign, by his Majesty’s command. T. Berkenhead.

Hudibras; the third and last part, written by the author of the first and second parts; printed for Simon Miller, at the sign of the Star, at the west end of St. Paul’s, 1678, 8vo. p. 285. This part had no notes during the author’s life, and who inserted them afterwards, is not known.

The first and second parts were republished in 1674. *Hudibras*, the first and second parts, written in the time of the late wars, corrected and amended with several additions and annotations, London, 1674, part i. p. 202; part ii. pp. 223-412.

III. See some lines from the first canto of *Hudibras*, admirably translated into Latin verse by Christopher Smart, published in the *Student*; or, *Oxford and Cambridge Miscellany*, published by Thornton in 1750.—See *Beloe’s Anecdotes*, vol. vi. p. 419. Some also by Dr. Harmer, Greek Professor at Oxford, may be seen in the notes to the *Biographia Britannica*.

IV. Dr. Grey's edition of *Hudibras* was published first in 1744. See on it *Gent. Mag.*, 1819, vol. xii. N. S. p. 416, Dr. Grey's valuable but *incorrect* edition. In Grey's edition the *Meditations of Justice Adam Overdo* in the stocks are inserted from B. Jonson's *Bartholomew Fair*. The soliloquy is ingeniously split into a dialogue, and one-half given to *Adam*, the other half to *Overdo*. The consulship of Julius and Cæsar was nothing to this." Dr. Grey left large additional notes, designed for a new edition, which were in the hands of Mr. Nichols. As regards the posthumous works of Butler (*v. Life*, p. xv.) it appears from the authority of Mr. Thyer that very few (only three) of them are authentic. Jacob, in his *Lives of the Dramatic Poets*, p. 21, says "not one line of those poems lately published under his (Butler's) name is genuine." See also *Gent. Mag.* May, 1819, vol. xii. N. S. p. 417, and *Thyer's Remains*, vol. i. p. 145, 302, 327. One passage occurs in the speech of the Earl of Pembroke which is curious from its strong verbal coincidence with a passage in Burke's will—"My will is that I have no monument, for then I must have epitaphs and verses, but all my life long I have had too much of them," *v. Burke's Will*, in *Bisset's Life*, p. 578. "I desire that no *monument* beyond a middle-sized tablet, with a small and simple inscription on the church-wall, or on the flag stone, be erected; but *I have had in my life time but too much of noise and compliment.*"

V. John Townley, the translator of *Hudibras*, was an officer of the Irish brigade, and a knight of the military order of St. Louis, he was uncle to Charles Townley, Esq. who possessed the marbles and statues. See *Nichol's Hogarth*, p. 145, and *Notice sur la vie et les écrits de M. Larcher*, p. 135, in *Class. Journal*, No. xix. When the critical reviewers reviewed Tytler's *Essay on Translation*, they would not believe in the existence of this book, it was so scarce. See *Beloe's Anecdotes*, i. p. 216,

220. The publication was superintended by M. L'Abbé Turberville Needham, and illustrated with notes by Larcher. There is an engraving of Mr. Townley by Skelton, with the following inscription:—

Ad impertiendum amicis inter Gallos
Linguae Anglicanae nonnihil peritis
Facetum poema Hudibras dictum
Accurate, festiveque gallice convertit
Hic Johannes Towneley
Caroli Towneley de Towneley
In agro Lancastriensi armigeri filius
Nat. A. D. 1679. Denat. A. D. 1782.
Grato, pioque animo fieri curavit
Johannes Towneley, nepos 1797.

Reprinted, Paris, 1819, 12mo. 3 vols. said to be a faithful reprint with the *addition* of notes by Larcher, and a Key to Hudibras by Zottin le jeune, and some account of the translator.

From the Literary Cyclopædia, p. 83.

VI. In estimating the poem of Hudibras, we should consider that genius takes every variety of form, adapts itself to every change of circumstance, and out of every object selects, according to its purpose, what is most essential to the view of truth, the exhibition of beauty or the chastisement of folly. There are conventional notions on the subject which would restrict the honours of genius to the few master minds which have led to the discovery of some great laws of nature, or displayed the highest forms of creative imagination. But it is sometimes as great proof of genius to draw pictures from daily and familiar life, and to work upon its elements, as it is to soar above them; and it is still a question for the philosophical critic to decide, whether to raise a gorgeous pyramid of dreams out of the abstractions of thought, be a higher task to master the fallacies of existence, and paint reality in all its strange and grotesque com-

binations. The author of *Hudibras* might alone afford scope to a controversy of this nature, for while he presents few, if any, of those characteristics which belong to the loftier class of minds, he so wonderfully adopts whatever is to be found in the actual world, or learnt from books, as to make his memorable lesson against bigotry one of the most remarkable productions of human ingenuity. But whatever may be the class to which Butler belongs in the Temple of Fame, there can only be one opinion respecting the value of his works, as a rich collection of lively sarcasms, often intermingled with wit on those errors and foibles of human nature, which at once verge upon extravagance and mischief. A practical observer of the world, and an active sharer in its concerns, Butler never forgets the pleasant and every day character of mankind. His mind was thoroughly impressed with the subject on which he wrote, and that subject embraced the whole circle of motives, which set society in action at the period when he lived. His wit is consequently often spent upon follies which are no longer conspicuous, and his experience made lessons which it would now be unprofitable to study. There is yet so much imperishable wisdom in his writings—so many warnings against evil tempers and absurdities, of which the seeds have never to this hour been eradicated from human nature, that Butler may still be estimated as one of the noblest writers of sententious maxims to be found in the English language.

VII. *From Retrospective Review*, vol. iii. 307.

LIST OF THE IMITATIONS OF HUDIBRAS.

- | | | |
|---|---|-------------|
| 1 | Hudibras, second part | London 1663 |
| 2 | Butler's Ghost; or, Hudibras, the fourth part ... | 1682 |
| 3 | Hogan Moganides; or, the Dutch Hudibras | 1674 |
| 4 | The Irish Hudibras; or, Fingallian Prince, &c. . | 1689 |
| 5 | The Whig's Supplication, by S. Colvil | 1695 |
| 6 | Pendragon; or, the Carpet Knight, his Kalendar . | 1698 |

- | | | |
|----|---|------|
| 7 | The Dissenting Hypocrite ; or, Occasional Con-
formist | 1704 |
| 8 | Vulgus Britannicus ; or, the British Hudibras, in
fifteen cantos, &c. by the Author of the Lon-
don Spy, second edition | 1710 |
| 9 | Hudibras Redivivus, &c. by E. Ward, no date. | |
| 10 | The Republican Procession ; or, the Tumultuous
Cavalcade, second edition | 1714 |
| 11 | The Hudibrastic Brewer, a satire on the former
(No. 10) | 1714 |
| 12 | Four Hudibrastic Cantos, being poems on four of
the greatest heroes | 1715 |
| 13 | Posthumous Works in Prose and Verse of Mr. S.
Butler, 3 vols. 12mo. 1720, and in 1 vol..... | 1754 |
| 14 | England's Reformation, &c., a Poem, by Thomas
Ward | 1747 |
| 15 | The Irish Hudibras, Hespero-neso-graphia, by
William Moffet, 1755, a reprint of No. 4. | |
| 16 | The Poetical Works of William Meston | 1767 |
| 17 | The Alma of Matthew Prior. | |

For a very judicious and elegant criticism on the merits and defects of these various poems, the reader is advised to consult the article in the work from which our list is taken. The present editor, who has carefully read most of the above poems, bears his testimony to the truth and justice of the observations upon them.

“Pope, in classing the English poets for his projected discourse on the rise and progress of English Poetry, has considered Sir John Mennis and Thomas Baynal as the original of Hudibras. See Dr. Warton's Essays. Some of these pieces certainly partake of the wit, raillery, and playful versification of Butler; and this collection, it is just to remember, made its appearance eight years before the publication of Hudibras. Dr. Farmer has traced much of Butler in Cleveland.” *Musarum Deliciæ*, first printed, 1655.

VIII. *An Epitaph on James Duke of Hamilton.*

He that three kingdoms made one flame,
 Blasted their beauty, burnt the frame,
 Himself now here in ashes lies;
 A part of this great Sacrifice :
 Here all of HAMILTON remains,
 Save what the other world contains.
 But (*Reader*) it is hard to tell
 Whether that world be Heav'n, or Hell.
 A *Scotch* man enters Hell at 's birth,
 And 'scapes it when he goes to earth,
 Assur'd no worse a Hell can come
 Than that which he enjoy'd at home.

Now did the Royall Workman botch
 This Duke, halfe-*English*, and halfe-*Scotch* !
 A Scot an English Earldom fits,
 As *Purple* doth your Marmuzets ;
 Suits like *Nol Cromwell* with the Crown,
 Or *Bradshaw* in his Scarlet-gown.
 Yet might he thus disguis'd (no lesse)
 Have slipt to Heav'n in 's *English* dresse,
 But that he'in hope of life became
 This mystick *Proteus* too as well
 Might cheat the Devill 'scape his Hell,
 Since to those pranks he pleas'd to play
 Religion ever pav'd the way ;
 Which he did to a *Faction* tie,
 Not to reforme but crucifie.
 'Twas he that first alarm'd the *Kirke*
 To this prepost'rous bloody worke,
 Upon the *King's* to place *Christ's throne*,
 A step and foot-stoole to his owne ;
 Taught Zeal a hundred tumbling tricks,
 And Scriptures twin'd with Politicks ;

The Pulpit made a Jugler's Box,
 Set Law and Gospell in the Stocks,
 As did old *Buchanan* and *Knox*,
 In those daies when (at once¹) the *Pox*
 And Presbyters a way did find
 Into the world to plague mankind.
 'Twas he patch'd up the new Divine,
 Part *Calvin*, and part *Catiline*,
 Could too transforme (without a Spell)
Satan into a *Gabriel*;
 Just like those pictures which we paint
 On this side Fiend, on that side *Saint*.
 Both this, and that, and every thing
 He was; for and against the King:
 Rather than he his ends would misse,
 Betray'd his Master with a kisse,
 And buri'd in one common Fate
 The glory of our *Church* and *State*:
 The *Crown* too levell'd on the ground;
 And having rook't all parties round,
 'Faith it was time then to be gone,
 Since he had all his businesse done.
 Next on the fatall *Block* expir'd,
 He to this *Marble-Cell* retir'd;
 Where all of *HAMILTON* remains
 But what Eternity contains.

Digitus Dei, or God's Justice upon Treachery and
 Treason, exemplified in the Life and Death of
 the late James Duke of Hamilton, whereto is
 added an Epitaph upon him. 4to. London, 1649.

This poem is ascribed to Marchamont Needham. It
 is curious as being much in the style of Butler, and
 being published fourteen years before *Hudibras* ap-
 peared.

¹ *The Pox, Presbytery, and Jesuitisme, are of the same
 standing.*

As it has been said, on the authority of Pope, that Butler was indebted for the peculiarities of his style to "Musarum Deliciæ, or Wit's Recreation;" and as that work is not in the possession of any but a few persons who are curious in poetry, it has been thought advisable to afford an extract or two from it. It was first printed in 1655.

"A letter to Sir John Mennis, when the Parliament denied the King money to pay the army, unless a priest, whom the King had reprieved, might be executed. Sir John at the same time wanting the money for provisions for his troop, desired me by his letter to goe to the priest, and to persuade him to dye for the good of the army, saying,

What is't for him to hang an houre,
To give an army strengthe and power?"

THE REPLY.

By my last letter, John, thou see'st
What I have done to soften priest,
Yet could not with all I could say
Persuade him hang, to get thee pay.
Thou swad, quoth he, I plainly see
The army wants no food by thee.
Fast oft'ner, friend, or if you'll eate,
Use oaten straw, or straw of wheate;
They'l serve to moderate thy jelly,
And (which it needs) take up thy belly.
As one that in a tavernne breakes
A glasse, steales by the barre and sneaks,
At this rebuke, with no less haste, l
Trudg'd from the priest and prison hasty.
The truth is, he gave little credit
To th'armies wants, because I said it;
And if you'll press it further, John,
'Tis fit you send a learned man.
For thou with ease can friends expose,
For thy behoof, to fortune's blows.

Suppose we being found together,
 Had pass'd for birds of the same feather,
 I had perchance been shrewdly shent,
 And maul'd too by the Parliament.
 Have you beheld the unlucky ape
 For roasted chestnuts mump and gape,
 And offering at them with his pawes,
 But loath he is to scorch his claws.
 When viewing on the hearth asleep
 A puppy, gives him cause to weep,
 To spare his own, he takes his helpe,
 And rakes out nuts with foot of whelpe ;
 Which done, as if 'twere all but play,
 Your name-sake looks another way.
 The cur awakes, and finds his thumbs
 In paine, but knows not whence it comes ;
 He takes it first to be some cramp,
 And now he spreads, now licks his vamp.
 Both are in vain, no ease appeares ;
 What should he doe ? he shakes his eares ;
 And hobling on three legs, he goes
 Whining away with aking toes.
 Not in much better case perhaps,
 I might have been to serve thy chaps,
 And have bestrewed my finger's end
 For groping so in cause of friend ;
 Whilst thou wouldst munch like horse in manger,
 And reach at nuts with others' danger,
 Yet have I ventured far to serve
 My friend that says—he's like to starve.

“ An Answer to a letter from Sir John Mennis, wherein
 he jeeres him for falling so quickly to the use of the
 Directory.”

Friend, thou dost lash me with a story,
 A long one too, of Directory ;
 When thou alone deserves the birch,
 That brought'st the bondage on the Church.
 Didst thou not treat for Bristow City
 And yield it up ?—the more's the pity.
 And saw'st thou not, how right or wrong
 The Common Prayer-Book went along ?
 Didst thou not scourge, as if enchanted,
 For articles Sir Thomas granted ;

And barter, as an author saith,
 Th' articles o' th' Christian faith?
 And now the Directory jostles
 Christ out o' th' church and his Apostles,
 And teares down the communion rayles,
 That men may take it on their tayles.
 Imagine, friend, *Bochus* the King,
 Engraven on *Sylla's* signet ring,
 Delivering open to his hands
Jugurth, and with him all the lands,
 Whom *Sylla* tooke and sent to Rome,
 There to abide the Senate's doome.

In the same fortune, I suppose
 John standing in 's doublet and hose;
 Delivering up amidst the throng
 The common prayer and Wisdom's song
 To hands of *Fairfax*, to be sent
 A sacrifice to the Parliament.
 Thou little thought'st what geare begun
 Wrapt in that treaty, *busie John*.
 There lurked the fire that turned to cinder
 The Church—her ornaments to tinder.
 There bound up in that treaty lyes
 The fate of all our Christmas pyes.
 Our holy-dayes then went to wrack,
 Our wakes were layd upon their back,
 Our gossips' spoones away were lurch'd,
 Our feastes, and fees for woemen church'd;
 All this and more ascribe we might
 To thee at Bristow, wretched knight.
 Yet thou upbraidst and raylst in rime
 On me, for that, which was thy crime.
 So froward children in the sun
 Amid their sports, some shrewd turne done,
 The faulty youth begins to prate
 And layes it on his harmlesse mate.
 Dated

From *Nymptom*, where the Cyder smiles,
 And *James* has horse as lame as *Gyles*.
 The fourth of *May*: and dost thou heare,
 'Tis, as I take it, the eighth yeare
 Since *Portugall* by *Duke Braganza*
 Was cut from *Spaine* without a handsaw.

Account of Mr. Samuel Butler, from Aubrey's Letters, in the Bodleian Library, edited by Dr. Bliss.

IX. Mr. Samuel Butler was borne at Pershore, in Worcestershire, as we suppose;¹ his brother lives there: went to schoole at Worcester. His father a man but of slender fortune, and to breed him at schoole was as much education as he was able to reach to. When but a boy, he would make observations and reflections on every thing one sayd or did, and censure it to be either well or ill. He never was at the university for the reason alledged. He came when a young man to be a servant to the Countesse of Kent,² whom he served severall yeares. Here, besides his study, he employed his time much in painting³ and drawing, and also in musique. He was thinking once to have made painting his profession.⁴ His love to and skill in painting made a great friendship between him and Mr. Samuel Cowper (the prince of limners of this age). He then studied the common lawes of England, but did not practise. He married a good jointuresse, the relict of . . . Morgan, by which meanes he lives comfortably. After the restauration of his ma^{tie}, when the courte at Ludlowe was againe sett up, he was then the king's steward at the

¹ He was born in Worcestershire, hard by Barton-bridge, $\frac{1}{2}$ a mile from Worcester, in the parish of S^t John, Mr. Hill thinks, who went to schoole with him.

² Mr. Saunders (y^e Countesse of Kent's kinsman) sayd that Mr. J. Selden much esteemed him for his partes, and would sometimes employ him to write letters for him beyond sea, and to translate for him. He was secretaire to the D. of Bucks, when he was Chancellor of Cambridge. He might have had preferments at first; but he would not accept any but very good, so at last he had none at all, and dyed in want.

³ He painted well, and made it (sometime) his profession. He wayted some yeares on the Countess of Kent. She gave her gent. 20 lib. per an. a-piece.

⁴ From Dr. Duke.

castle there. He printed a witty poeme called *Hudibras*, the first part A^o 166. which tooke extremely, so that the king and Lord Chanc. Hyde would have him sent for, and accordingly he was sent for. (The L^d Ch. Hyde hath his picture in his library over the chimney.) They both promised him great matters, but to this day he has got no employment, only the king gave him lib.

He is of a middle stature, strong sett, high coloured, a head of sorrell haire, a severe and sound judgement: a good fellowe. He hath often sayd that way (è. g. Mr. Edw. Waller's) of quibbling with sence will hereafter growe as much out of fashion and be as ridicule^s as quibbling with words. 2^d. N. B. He hath been much troubled with the gowt, and particularly, 1679, he stirred not out of his chamber from October till Easter.

He⁶ dyed of a consumption Septemb. 25 (Anno Dⁿⁱ 1680, 70 circiter), and buried 27, according to his owne appointment in the churchyard of Covent Garden; sc. in the north part next the church at the east end. His feet touch the wall. His grave, 2 yards distant from the pillaster of the dore, (by his desire) 6 foot deepe.

About 25 of his old acquaintance at his funeral: I myself being one.

HUDIBRAS UNPRINTED.

No Jesuite ever took in hand
 To plant a church in barren land;
 Or ever thought it worth his while
 A Swede or Russe to reconcile.
 For where there is not store of wealth,
 Souls are not worth the chandge of health.
 Spaine and America had designes
 To sell their Ghospell for their wines,
 For had the Mexicans been poore,
 No Spaniard twice had landed on their shore.
 'Twas Gold the Catholic Religion planted,
 Which, had they wanted Gold, they still had wanted.

⁵ [Siv. Edit.]

⁶ [Evidently written some time after the former part. E.]

He had made very sharp reflexions upon the court in his last part.

Writt my Lord (John⁷) Rosse's Answer to the Marquesse of Dorchester.

Memorandum. Satyricall witts disoblige whom they converse with, &c. consequently make to themselves many enemies and few friends, and this was his manner and case. He was of a leonine-coloured haire, sanguine, cholérique, middle sized, strong.

⁷ [In the hand-writing of Anthony à Wood. Edit.]

HUDIBRAS.

PART I. CANTO I.

THE ARGUMENT.

Sir Hudibras his passing worth,
The manner how he sally'd forth,
His arms and equipage are shown,
His horse's virtues and his own :
Th' adventure of the Bear and Fiddle
Is sung, but breaks off in the middle.*

WHEN civil dudgeon first grew high,
And men fell out they knew not why ;
When hard words, jealousies, and fears,
Set folks together by the ears,
And made them fight, like mad or drunk, 5
For Dame Religion as for punk ;
Whose honesty they all durst swear for,
Though not a man of them knew wherefore ;

* A ridicule on Ronsarde and Davenant.

¹ VAR. 'Civil fury.'—To take in 'dudgeon' is inwardly to resent some injury or affront, and what is previous to actual fury.

² It may be justly said, 'They knew not why;' since, as Lord Clarendon observes, "The like peace and plenty, and universal tranquillity, was never enjoyed by any nation for ten years together, before those unhappy troubles began."

³ By 'hard words' he probably means the cant words used by the Presbyterians and sectaries of those times; such as Gospel-walking, Gospel-preaching, Soul-saving, Elect, Saints, the Godly, the Predestinate, and the like; which they applied to their own preachers and themselves.

When Gospel-trumpeter, surrounded
 With long-ear'd rout, to battle sounded ; 10
 And pulpit, drum ecclesiastic,
 Was beat with fist instead of a stick ;
 Then did Sir Knight abandon dwelling,
 And out he rode a-colonelling.
 A wight he was, whose very sight would 15
 Entitle him Mirror of Knighthood,
 That never bow'd his stubborn knee
 To any thing but chivalry,
 Nor put up blow, but that which laid
 Right Worshipful on shoulder blade ; 20
 Chief of domestic knights and errant,
 Either for chartel or for warrant ;
 Great on the bench, great in the saddle,
 That could as well bind o'er as swaddle ;

¹¹ ¹² Alluding to their vehement action in the pulpit, and their beating it with their fists, as if they were beating a drum.

¹³ Our author, to make his Knight appear more ridiculous, has dressed him in all kinds of fantastic colours, and put many characters together to finish him a perfect coxcomb.

¹⁴ The Knight (if Sir Samuel Luke was Mr. Butler's hero) was not only a Colonel in the Parliament army, but also Scoutmaster-general in the counties of Bedford, Surrey, &c. This gives us some light into his character and conduct ; for he is now entering upon his proper office, full of pretendedly pious and sanctified resolutions for the good of his country. His peregrinations are so consistent with his office and humour, that they are no longer to be called fabulous or improbable.

¹⁷ ¹⁸ *i. e.* He kneeled to the king, when he knighted him, but seldom upon any other occasion.

²² 'Chartel' is a challenge to a duel.

²³ In this character of Hudibras all the abuses of human learning are finely satirised: philosophy, logic, rhetoric, mathematics, metaphysics, and school-divinity.

Mighty he was at both of these, 25
 And styl'd of War, as well as Peace :
 (So some rats, of amphibious nature,
 Are either for the land or water).
 But here our Authors make a doubt
 Whether he were more wise or stout : 30
 Some hold the one, and some the other,
 But, howsoe'er they make a pother,
 The diff'rence was so small, his brain
 Outweigh'd his rage but half a grain ;
 Which made some take him for a tool 35
 That knaves do work with, call'd a Fool.
 For 't has been held by many, that
 As Montaigne, playing with his cat,
 Complains she thought him but an ass,
 Much more she would Sir Hudibras : 40
 (For that's the name our valiant Knight
 To all his challenges did write).
 But they're mistaken very much ;
 'Tis plain enough he was not such.
 We grant, although he had much wit, 45
 H' was very shy of using it,
 As being loth to wear it out,
 And therefore bore it not about ;
 Unless on holydays or so,
 As men their best apparel do. 50
 Beside, 'tis known he could speak Greek
 As naturally as pigs squeak ;
 That Latin was no more difficile,
 Than to a blackbird 'tis to whistle :
 Being rich in both, he never scanted 55
 His bounty unto such as wanted ;

⁵⁵ ⁵⁶ This is the property of a pedantic coxcomb, who prates most learnedly amongst illiterate persons, and makes

But much of either would afford
 To many that had not one word.
 For Hebrew roots, although they're found
 To flourish most in barren ground, 60
 He had such plenty as suffic'd
 To make some think him circumcis'd ;
 And truly so he was, perhaps,
 Not as a proselyte, but for claps.

He was in logic a great critic, 65
 Profoundly skill'd in analytic ;
 He could distinguish, and divide
 A hair 'twixt south and south-west side ;
 On either which he would dispute,
 Confute, change hands, and still confute : 70
 He'd undertake to prove, by force
 Of argument, a man's no horse ;
 He'd prove a buzzard is no fowl,
 And that a lord may be an owl ;
 A calf an alderman, a goose a justice, 75
 And rooks Committee-men and Trustees.

a mighty pother about books and languages, where he is sure to be admired, though not understood.

⁶³ ⁶⁴ VAR. ' And truly so perhaps he was,

'Tis many a pious Christian's case.'

⁷⁵ Such was Alderman Pennington, who sent a person to Newgate for singing (what he called) ' a malignant psalm.'

Lord Clarendon observes, " That after the declaration of No more addresses to the King, they who were not above the condition of ordinary constables six or seven years before, were now the justices of the peace." Dr. Bruno Ryves informs us, " That the town of Chelmsford in Essex was governed, at the beginning of the Rebellion, by a tinker, two cobblers, two tailors, and two pedlers."

⁷⁶ In the several counties, especially the Associated ones (Middlesex, Kent, Surrey, Sussex, Norfolk, Suffolk, and Cambridgeshire) which sided with the Parliament, com-

He'd run in debt by disputation,
 And pay with ratiocination :
 All this by syllogism, true
 In mood and figure he would do. 80
 For rhetoric, he could not ope
 His mouth, but out there flew a trope ;
 And when he happen'd to break off
 I' th' middle of his speech, or cough,
 H' had hard words ready to show why, 85
 And tell what rules he did it by ;
 Else, when with greatest art he spoke,
 You'd think he talk'd like other folk ;
 For all a rhetorician's rules
 Teach nothing but to name his tools. 90
 But, when he pleas'd to show 't, his speech,
 In loftiness of sound, was rich ;
 A Babylonish dialect,
 Which learned pedants much affect ;
 It was a party-colour'd dress 95
 Of patch'd and pyebald languages ;
 'Twas English cut on Greek and Latin,
 Like fustian heretofore on satin ;
 It had an odd promiscuous tone,
 As if h' had talk'd three parts in one ; 100
 Which made some think, when he did gabble,
 Th' had heard three labourers of Babel,
 Or Cerberus himself pronounce
 A leash of languages at once.
 This he as volubly would vent, 105
 As if his stock would ne'er be spent :

mittees were erected of such men as were for the Good Cause, as they called it, who had authority, from the members of the two Houses at Westminster, to fine and imprison whom they pleased.

And truly, to support that charge,
 He had supplies as vast and large ;
 For he could coin or counterfeit
 New words, with little or no wit ; 110
 Words so debas'd and hard, no stone
 Was hard enough to touch them on ;
 And when with hasty noise he spoke 'em,
 The ignorant for current took 'em ;
 That had the orator, who once 115
 Did fill his mouth with pebble stones
 When he harangu'd, but known his phrase,
 He would have us'd no other ways.
 In mathematics he was greater
 Than Tycho Brahe or Erra Pater ; 120
 For he, by geometric scale,
 Could take the size of pots of ale ;
 Resolve by sines and tangents straight
 If bread or butter wanted weight ;
 And wisely tell what hour o' th' day 125
 The clock does strike, by Algebra.
 Beside, he was a shrewd philosopher,
 And had read ev'ry text and gloss over ;
 Whate'er the crabbed'st author hath,

¹⁰⁹ The Presbyterians coined a great number, such as Out-goings, Carryings-on, Nothingness, Workings-out, Gospel-walking-times, &c. which we shall meet with hereafter in the speeches of the Knight and Squire, and others, in this Poem ; for which they are bantered by Sir John Birkenhead.

¹¹⁵ Demosthenes is here meant, who had a defect in his speech.

¹²⁰ An eminent Danish mathematician ; and William Lilly, the famous astrologer of those times.

He understood b' implicit faith : 130
 Whatever sceptic could enquire for,
 For ev'ry why he had a wherefore ;
 Knew more than forty of them do,
 As far as words and terms could go ;
 All which he understood by rote, 135
 And, as occasion serv'd, would quote ;
 No matter whether right or wrong ;
 They might be either said or sung.
 His notions fitted things so well,
 That which was which he could not tell, 140
 But oftentimes mistook the one
 For th' other, as great clerks have done.
 He could reduce all things to acts,
 And knew their natures by abstracts ;
 Where Entity and Quiddity, 145
 The ghosts of defunct bodies, fly ;
 Where truth in person does appear,
 Like words congeal'd in northern air.
 He knew what's what, and that's as high
 As metaphysic wit can fly : 150
 In school-divinity as able
 As he that hight Irrefragable ;
 A second Thomas, or, at once

¹³¹ VAR. ' Inquere.'

¹⁴⁵ VAR. ' He'd tell where Entity and Quiddity.'

¹⁵² Alexander Hales was born in Gloucestershire, and flourished about the year 1236, at the time when what was called School-divinity was much in vogue ; in which science he was so deeply read, that he was called ' Doctor Irrefragabilis ;' that is, the ' Invincible Doctor,' whose arguments could not be resisted.

¹⁵³ Thomas Aquinas, a Dominican friar, was born in

To name them all, another Dunce :
 Profound in all the Nominal
 'And Real ways beyond them all :

155

1224, studied at Cologne and at Paris. He new-modelled the school-divinity, and was therefore called the ' Angelic Doctor,' and ' Eagle' of divines. The most illustrious persons of his time were ambitious of his friendship, and put a high value on his merits, so that they offered him bishoprics, which he refused with as much ardour as others seek after them. He died in the fiftieth year of his age, and was canonized by Pope John XXII. We have his works in eighteen volumes, several times printed.

¹⁵⁴ Johannes Duns Scotus was a very learned man, who lived about the end of the thirteenth and beginning of the fourteenth century. The English and Scots strive which of them shall have the honour of his birth. The English say he was born in Northumberland; the Scots allege he was born at Dunse in the Merse, the neighbouring county to Northumberland, and hence was called ' Duns Scotus : ' Moreri, Buchanan, and other Scotch historians, are of this opinion, and for proof, cite his epitaph ;

Scotia me genuit, Anglia suscepit,
 Gallia edocuit, Germania tenet.

He died at Cologne, Nov. 8, 1308. In the ' Supplement ' to Dr. Cave's ' Historia Literaria,' he is said to be extraordinary learned in physics, metaphysics, mathematics, and astronomy; that his fame was so great when at Oxford, that 30,000 scholars came thither to hear his lectures: that when at Paris, his arguments and authority carried it for the immaculate conception of the Blessed Virgin, so that they appointed a festival on that account, and would admit no scholars to degrees but such as were of this mind. He was a great opposer of Thomas Aquinas's doctrine; and for being a very acute logician, was called ' Doctor Subtilis,' which was the reason also that an old punster always called him the ' Lathy Doctor.'

¹⁵⁵ ¹⁵⁶ Gulielmus Occham was father of the Nominals, and Johannes Duns Scotus of the Reals.

For he a rope of sand could twist
 As tough as learned Sorbonist,
 And weave fine cobwebs, fit for skull
 That's empty when the moon is full ; 160
 Such as take lodgings in a head
 That's to be let unfurnished.
 He could raise scruples dark and nice,
 And after solve 'em in a trice ;
 As if Divinity had catch'd 165
 The itch, on purpose to be scratch'd ;
 Or, like a mountebank, did wound
 And stab herself with doubts profound,
 Only to show with how small pain
 The sores of Faith are cur'd again ; 170
 Altho' by woful proof we find
 They always leave a scar behind.
 He knew the seat of Paradise,
 Could tell in what degree it lies,
 And, as he was dispos'd, could prove it 175
 Below the moon, or else above it ;
 What Adam dreamt of, when his bride
 Came from her closet in his side ;
 Whether the Devil tempted her
 By a high Dutch interpreter ; 180
 If either of them had a navel ;
 Who first made music malleable ;
 Whether the Serpent, at the Fall,
 Had cloven feet, or none at all :
 All this, without a gloss or comment, 185

157 158 VAR. ' And with as delicate a hand
 Could twist as tough a rope of sand.'

161 Several of the Ancients have supposed that Adam
 and Eve had no navels ; and, among the Moderns, the late
 learned Bishop Cumberland was of this opinion

He could unriddle in a moment,
 In proper terms, such as men smatter
 When they throw out and miss the matter.

For his religion, it was fit
 To match his learning and his wit: 190
 'Twas Presbyterian true blue;
 For he was of that stubborn crew
 Of errant saints, whom all men grant
 To be the true Church Militant;
 Such as do build their faith upon 195
 The holy text of pike and gun;
 Decide all controversies by
 Infallible artillery;
 And prove their doctrine orthodox,
 By Apostolic blows and knocks; 200
 Call fire and sword, and desolation,
 A godly, thorough Reformation,
 Which always must be carry'd on,
 And still be doing, never done;
 As if Religion were intended 205

¹⁹³ ¹⁹⁴ Where Presbytery has been established, it has been usually effected by force of arms, like the religion of Mahomet: thus it was established at Geneva in Switzerland, Holland, Scotland, &c. In France, for some time, by that means, it obtained a toleration; much blood was shed to get it established in England: and once, during that Grand Rebellion, it seemed very near gaining an establishment here.

¹⁹⁵ ¹⁹⁶ Upon these Cornet Joyce built his faith, when he carried away the King, by force, from Holdenby: for, when his Majesty asked him for a sight of his Instructions, Joyce said, he should see them presently; and so drawing up his troop in the inward court, "These, Sir (said the Cornet), are my Instructions."

¹⁹⁹ ²⁰⁰ Many instances of that kind are given by Dr. Walker, in his 'Sufferings of the Episcopal Clergy.'

For nothing else but to be mended :
 A sect whose chief devotion lies
 In odd perverse antipathies ;
 In falling out with that or this,
 And finding somewhat still amiss ; 210
 More peevish, cross, and splenetic,
 Than dog distract, or monkey sick :
 That with more care keep holyday
 The wrong, than others the right way ;
 Compound for sins they are inclin'd to, 215
 By damning those they have no mind to :
 Still so perverse and opposite,
 As if they worshipp'd God for spite :
 The self-same thing they will abhor
 One way, and long another for : 220
 Freewill they one way disavow,
 Another, nothing else allow :
 All piety consists therein
 In them, in other men all sin :
 Rather than fail, they will defy 225
 That which they love most tenderly ;
 Quarrel with minc'd-pies, and disparage
 Their best and dearest friend, plum-porridge ;
 Fat pig and goose itself oppose,
 And blaspheme custard through the nose. 230
 Th' apostles of this fierce religion,
 Like Mahomet's, were ass and widgeon,

²⁰⁷ The religion of the Presbyterians of those times consisted principally in an opposition to the Church of England, and in quarrelling with the most innocent customs then in use, as the eating Christmas-pies and plum-porridge at Christmas ; which they reputed sinful.

^{213 214} They were so remarkably obstinate in this respect, that they kept a fast upon Christmas-day.

To whom our Knight, by fast instinct
 Of wit and temper, was so linkt,
 As if hypocrisy and nonsense 235
 Had got th'advowson of his conscience.

Thus was he gifted and accoutred,
 We mean on th'inside, not the outward :
 That next of all we shall discuss ;
 Then listen, Sirs, it follows thus. 240

His tawny beard was th' equal grace
 Both of his wisdom and his face ;
 In cut and die so like a tile,
 A sudden view it would beguile ;
 The upper part whereof was whey, 245
 The nether orange, mix'd with grey.
 This hairy meteor did denounce
 The fall of sceptres and of crowns ;
 With grisly type did represent
 Declining age of government, 250

²³⁵ ²³⁶ Dr. Bruno Ryves gives a remarkable instance of a fanatical conscience in a captain, who was invited by a soldier to eat part of a goose with him ; but refused, because, he said, it was stolen : but being to march away, he who would eat no stolen goose made no scruple to ride away upon a stolen mare ; for, plundering Mrs. Bartlet of her mare, this hypocritical captain gave sufficient testimony to the world that the old Pharisee and new Puritan have consciences of the self-same temper, " To strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel."

²⁴¹ Mr. Butler, in his description of Hudibras's beard, seems to have had an eye to Jaques's description of the Country Justice, in 'As you like it.' It may be asked, Why the Poet is so particular upon the Knight's beard, and gives it the preference to all his other accoutrements ? The answer seems to be plain : the Knight had made a vow not to cut it till the Parliament had subdued the King ; hence it became necessary to have it fully described.

And tell, with hieroglyphic spade,
 Its own grave and the State's were made :
 Like Samson's heart-breakers, it grew
 In time to make a nation rue ;
 Though it contributed its own fall, 255
 To wait upon the public downfall :
 It was monastic, and did grow
 In holy orders by strict vow.
 Of rule as sullen and severe,
 As that of rigid Cordeliere : 260
 'Twas bound to suffer persecution,
 And martyrdom, with resolution ;
 T' oppose itself against the hate
 And vengeance of th' incensed state,
 In whose defiance it was worn, 265
 Still ready to be pull'd and torn,
 With red-hot irons to be tortured,
 Revil'd, and spit upon, and martyr'd ;
 Maugre all which 'twas to stand fast
 As long as Monarchy should last ; 270
 But when the state should hap to reel,
 'Twas to submit to fatal steel,
 And fall, as it was consecrate,
 A sacrifice to fall of state,
 Whose thread of life the Fatal Sisters 275
 Did twist together with its whiskers,
 And twine so close, that Time should never,
 In life or death, their fortunes sever,
 But with his rusty sickle mow
 Both down together at a blow. 280
 So learned Taliacotius, from

²⁵⁷ VAR. It was 'canonic.'

²⁸¹ Gasper Taliacotius was born at Bononia, A. D. 1553,

The brawny part of porter's bum,
 Cut supplemental noses, which
 Would last as long as parent breech,
 But when the date of Nock was out 285
 Off dropt the sympathetic snout.
 His back, or rather burthen, show'd
 As if it stoop'd with its own load :
 For as Æneas bore his sire
 Upon his shoulders through the fire, 290
 Our Knight did bear no less a pack
 Of his own buttocks on his back ;
 Which now had almost got the upper-
 Hand of his head for want of crupper.
 To poise this equally, he bore 295
 A paunch of the same bulk before,
 Which still he had a special care
 To keep well-cramm'd with thrifty fare,
 As white-pot, butter-milk, and curds,
 Such as a country-house affords ; 300
 With other victual, which anon
 We further shall dilate upon,
 When of his hose we come to treat,
 The cupboard where he kept his meat.
 His doublet was of sturdy buff, 305
 And though not sword, yet cudgel-proof,
 Whereby 'twas fitter for his use

and was Professor of physic and surgery there. He died 1599. His statue stands in the Anatomy theatre, holding a nose in its hand.—He wrote a treatise in Latin called 'Chirurgia Nota,' in which he teaches the art of ingrafting noses, ears, lips, &c. with the proper instruments and bandages. This book has passed through two editions. See 'Græfe de Rhinoplastice, sive arte curtum Nasum ad Vivum restituendi Commentatio,' 4to. Berolin, 1818.

Who fear'd no blows but such as bruise.

His breeches were of rugged woollen,
And had been at the siege of Bullen; 310

To Old King Harry so well known,
Some writers held they were his own :
Through they were lin'd with many a piece
Of ammunition bread and cheese,

And fat black-puddings, proper food 315
For warriors that delight in blood.

For, as we said, he always chose
To carry vittle in his hose,
That often tempted rats and mice
The ammunition to surprise ; 320

And when he put a hand but in
The one or t'other magazine,
They stoutly in defence on't stood,
And from the wounded foe drew blood ;

And, till th' were storm'd and beaten out, 325
Ne'er left the fortify'd redoubt.

And though knights-errant, as some think,
Of old did neither eat nor drink,
Because when thorough deserts vast
And regions desolate they past, 330

Where belly-timber above ground
Or under was not to be found,
Unless they graz'd there's not one word
Of their provision on record ;

Which made some confidently write, 335
They had no stomachs but to fight :

'Tis false ; for Arthur wore in hall
Round table like a farthingal,
On which, with shirt pull'd out behind,
And eke before, his good knights din'd : 340

Though 'twas no table some suppose,
 But a huge pair of round trunk-hose,
 In which he carry'd as much meat
 As he and all the knights could eat,
 When, laying by their swords and truncheons, 345
 They took their breakfasts or their nuncheons.
 But let that pass at present, lest
 We should forget where we digrest,
 As learned authors use, to whom
 We leave it, and to th' purpose come. 350

His puissant sword unto his side,
 Near his undaunted heart, was tied,
 With basket-hilt that would hold broth,
 And serve for fight and dinner both ;
 In it he melted lead for bullets 355

To shoot at foes, and sometimes pullets,
 To whom he bore so fell a grutch,
 He ne'er gave quarter t' any such.
 The trenchant blade Toledo trusty
 For want of fighting was grown rusty, 360
 And ate into itself for lack

Of somebody to hew and hack :
 The peaceful scabbard, where it dwelt,
 The rancour of its edge had felt ;
 For of the lower end two handful 365
 It had devoured, 'twas so manful,
 And so much scorn'd to lurk in case,
 As if it durst not show its face.

In many desperate attempts
 Of warrants, exigents, contempts, 370
 It had appear'd with courage bolder
 Than Serjeant Bum invading shoulder :
 Oft had it ta'en possession,
 And pris'ners too, or made them run.

This sword a dagger had, his page, 375
 That was but little for his age,
 And therefore waited on him so
 As dwarfs upon knights-errant do.
 It was a serviceable dudgeon,
 Either for fighting or for drudging : 380
 When it had stabb'd, or broke a head,
 It would scrape trenchers, or chip bread ;
 Toast cheese or bacon ; though it were
 To bate a mouse-trap, 'twould not care :
 'Twould make clean shoes, and in the earth 385
 Set leeks and onions, and so forth :
 It had been 'prentice to a brewer,
 Where this and more it did endure,
 But left the trade as many more
 Have lately done on the same score. 390

In th' holsters at his saddle-bow
 Two aged pistols he did stow,
 Among the surplus of such meat
 As in his hose he could not get :
 These would inveigle rats with th' scent, 395
 To forage when the cocks were bent,
 And sometimes catch 'em with a snap,
 As cleverly as th' ablest trap.
 They were upon hard duty still,
 And every night stood sentinel, 400
 To guard the magazine i' th' hose
 From two-legg'd and from four-legg'd foes.

Thus clad and fortify'd Sir Knight
 From peaceful home set forth to fight.
 But first with nimble active force 405
 He got on th' outside of his horse :
 For having but one stirrup ty'd
 T' his saddle on the further side,

It was so short h' had much ado
 To reach it with his desp'rate toe ; 410
 But after many strains and heaves,
 He got up to the saddle-eaves,
 From whence he vaulted into th' seat
 With so much vigour, strength, and heat,
 That he had almost tumbled o'er 415
 With his own weight, but did recover
 By laying hold on tail and mane,
 Which oft he us'd instead of rein.

But now we talk of mounting steed,
 Before we further do proceed, 420
 It doth behove us to say something
 Of that which bore our valiant Bumkin.
 The beast was sturdy, large, and tall,
 With mouth of meal and eyes of wall,
 I would say eye, for h' had but one, 425
 As most agree, though some say none.
 He was well stay'd, and in his gate
 Preserv'd a grave, majestic state ;
 At spur or switch no more he skipt
 Or mended pace than Spaniard whipt, 430
 And yet so fiery, he would bound
 As if he griev'd to touch the ground ;
 That Cæsar's horse, who, as fame goes,
 Had corns upon his feet and toes,
 Was not by half so tender hooft, 435
 Nor trod upon the ground so soft :
 And as that beast would kneel and stoop
 (Some write) to take his rider up ;
 So Hudibras his ('tis well known)
 Would often do to set him down. 440
 We shall not need to say what lack
 Of leather was upon his back,

For that was hidden under pad,
 And breech of Knight gall'd full as bad.
 His strutting ribs on both sides show'd 445
 Like furrows he himself had plough'd ;
 For underneath the skirt of pannel,
 'Twixt ev'ry two there was a channel.
 His draggling tail hung in the dirt,
 Which on his rider he would flirt, 450
 Still as his tender side he prickt,
 With arm'd heel, or with unarm'd, kickt :
 For Hudibras wore but one spur,
 As wisely knowing could he stir
 To active trot one side of 's horse, 455
 The other would not hang an arse.

A Squire he had whose name was Ralph,
 That in th' adventure went his half,
 Though writers, for more stately tone,
 Do call him Ralpho, 'tis all one ; 460
 And when we can, with metre safe,
 We'll call him so ; if not, plain Ralph ;
 (For rhyme the rudder is of verses,
 With which, like ships, they steer their courses) :
 An equal stock of wit and valour 465
 He had laid in, by birth a tailor.
 The mighty Tyrian queen, that gain'd
 With subtle shreds a tract of land,
 Did leave it with a castle fair
 To his great ancestor, her heir ; 470

⁴⁵⁷ Sir Roger L'Estrange ('Key to Hudibras') says, this famous Squire was one Isaac Robinson, a zealous butcher in Moorfields, who was always contriving some new querpo cut in church government: but, in a 'Key' at the end of a burlesque poem of Mr. Butler's, 1706, in folio, p. 12, it is observed, "That Hudibras's Squire was one Pemble, a tailor, and one of the Committee of Sequestrators."

From him descended cross-legg'd knights,
 Fam'd for their faith and warlike fights
 Against the bloody Cannibal,
 Whom they destroy'd both great and small.
 This sturdy Squire he had, as well 475
 As the bold Trojan knight, seen hell,
 Not with a counterfeited pass
 Of golden bough, but true gold-lace:
 His knowledge was not far behind
 The Knight's, but of another kind, 480
 And he another way came by 't,
 Some call it Gifts, and some New-light;
 A lib'ral art, that costs no pains
 Of study, industry, or brains.
 His wit was sent him for a token, 485
 But in the carriage crack'd and broken;
 Like commendation nine-pence crookt
 With—To and from my love—it lookt.
 He ne'er consider'd it, as loth
 To look a gift-horse in the mouth, 490
 And very wisely would lay forth
 No more upon it than 'twas worth;
 But as he got it freely, so
 He spent it frank and freely too:
 For saints themselves will sometimes be, 495
 Of gifts that cost them nothing, free.
 By means of this, with hem and cough,

⁴⁸⁵ VAR. 'His wits were sent him.'

⁴⁸⁷ ⁴⁸⁸ Until the year 1696, when all money, not milled, was called in, a ninepenny piece of silver was as common as sixpences or shillings, and these ninepences were usually bent as sixpences commonly are now, which bending was called, To my love and from my love; and such ninepences the ordinary fellows gave or sent to their sweethearts as tokens of love.

Prolongers to enlighten'd stuff,
 He could deep mysteries unriddle,
 As easily as thread a needle : 500
 For as of vagabonds we say,
 That they are ne'er beside their way,
 Whate'er men speak by this new light,
 Still they are sure to be i' th' right.
 'Tis a dark lantern of the Spirit, 505
 Which none see by but those that bear it ;
 A light that falls down from on high,
 For spiritual trades to cozen by ;
 An *ignis fatuus*, that bewitches,
 And leads men into pools and ditches, 510
 To make them dip themselves, and sound
 For Christendom in dirty pond ;
 To dive like wild-fowl for salvation,
 And fish to catch regeneration.
 This light inspires and plays upon 515
 The nose of saint, like bagpipe drone,
 And speaks through hollow empty soul,
 As through a trunk or whisp'ring hole,
 Such language as no mortal ear
 But spirit'al eaves-droppers can hear : 520
 So Phœbus, or some friendly Muse,
 Into small poets song infuse,
 Which they at second-hand rehearse,
 Through reed or bagpipe, verse for verse.

Thus Ralph became infallible 525
 As three or four-legg'd oracle,
 The ancient cup, or modern chair,
 Spoke truth point blank, though unaware.

For mystic learning, wondrous able

⁵¹¹ Alluding to Ralpho's religion, who was probably an Anabaptist or Dipper.

In magic, talisman, and cabal, 530
 Whose primitive tradition reaches
 As far as Adam's first green breeches ;
 Deep-sighted in intelligences,
 Ideas, atoms, influences ;
 And much of *Terra Incognita*, 535
 Th' intelligible world, could say ;
 A deep occult philosopher,
 As learn'd as the Wild Irish are,
 Or Sir Agrippa, for profound
 And solid lying much renown'd : 540
 He Anthroposophus, and Floud,
 And Jacob Behmen, understood ;
 Knew many an amulet and charm,
 That would do neither good nor harm ;
 In Rosycrucian lore as learned 545
 As he that *Verè adeptus* earned :
 He understood the speech of birds
 As well as they themselves do words ;
 Could tell what subtlest parrots mean,
 That speak and think contrary clean ; 550
 What member 'tis of whom they talk
 When they cry Rope, and Walk, Knave, walk.
 He'd extract numbers out of matter,
 And keep them in a glass, like water,
 Of sov'reign pow'r to make men wise ; 555
 For, dropt in blear thick-sighted eyes,
 They'd make them see in darkest night,
 Like owls, though purblind in the light.
 By help of these (as he profest)
 He had First Matter seen undrest : 560
 He took her naked, all alone,

Before one rag of form was on.
 The Chaos, too, he had descry'd,
 And seen quite through, or else he ly'd :
 Not that of Pasteboard, which men shew 565
 For groats at fair of Barthol'mew ;
 But its great grandsire, first o' th' name,
 Whence that and Reformation came,
 Both cousin-germans, and right able
 T' inveigle and draw in the rabble : 570
 But reformation was, some say,
 O' th' younger house to Puppet-play.
 He could foretell whats'ever was
 By consequence to come to pass ;
 As death of great men, alterations, 575

⁵⁷³ The rebellious clergy would in their prayers pretend to foretell things, to encourage people in their rebellion. I meet with the following instance in the prayers of Mr. George Swathe, minister of Denham, in Suffolk: "O my good Lord God, I praise thee for discovering the last week, in the day-time, a vision, that there were two great armies about York, one of the malignant party about the King, the other party Parliament and professors: and the better side should have help from Heaven against the worst; about, or at which instant of time, we heard the soldiers at York had raised up a sconce against Hull, intending to plant fifteen pieces against Hull; against which fort Sir John Hotham, Keeper of Hull, by a garrison, discharged four great ordnance, and broke down their sconce, and killed divers Cavaliers in it.—Lord, I praise thee for discovering this victory, at the instant of time that it was done, to my wife, which did then presently confirm her drooping heart, which the last week had been dejected three or four days, and no arguments could comfort her against the dangerous times approaching; but when she had prayed to be established in faith in thee, then presently thou didst, by this vision, strongly possess her soul that thine and our enemies should be overcome."

Diseases, battles, inundations :
All this without th' eclipse o' th' sun,
Or dreadful comet, he hath done
By inward light, a way as good,
And easy to be understood ; 580
But with more lucky hit than those
That use to make the stars depose,
Like Knights o' th' Post, and falsely charge
Upon themselves what others forge ;
As if they were consenting to 585
All mischiefs in the world men do,
Or, like the devil, did tempt and sway 'em
To rogueries, and then betray 'em.
They'll search a planet's house, to know
Who broke and robb'd a house below ; 590
Examine Venus and the Moon,
Who stole a thimble or a spoon ;
And though they nothing will confess,
Yet by their very looks can guess,
And tell what guilty aspect bodes, 595
Who stole, and who receiv'd the goods :
They'll question Mars, and, by his look,
Detect who 'twas that nimm'd a cloak ;
Make Mercury confess, and 'peach
Those thieves which he himself did teach. 600
They'll find i' th' physiognomies
O' th' planets, all men's destinies,
Like him that took the doctor's bill ;
And swallow'd it instead o' th' pill ;
Cast the nativity o' th' question, 605
And from positions to be guest on,
As sure as if they knew the moment
Of Native's birth, tell what will come on't.
They'll feel the pulses of the stars,

To find out agues, coughs, catarrhs, 610
 And tell what crisis does divine
 The rot in sheep, or mange in swine ;
 In men, what gives or cures the itch,
 What makes them cuckolds, poor or rich ;
 What gains or loses, hangs or saves ; 615
 What makes men great, what fools or knaves,
 But not what wise, for only' of those
 The stars (they say) cannot dispose.
 No more than can the astrologians ;
 There they say right, and like true Trojans : 620
 This Ralpho knew, and therefore took
 The other course, of which we spoke.

Thus was th' accomplish'd Squire endu'd
 With gifts and knowledge per'lous shrewd :
 Never did trusty squire with knight, 625
 Or knight with squire, e'er jump more right.
 Their arms and equipage did fit,
 As well as virtues, parts, and wit :
 Their valours, too, were of a rate ;
 And out they sally'd at the gate. 630
 Few miles on horseback had they jogged
 But Fortune unto them turn'd dogged ;
 For they a sad adventure met,
 Of which anon we mean to treat.
 But ere we venture to unfold 635
 Achievements so resolv'd and bold,
 We should, as learned poets use,
 Invoke th' assistance of some Muse,
 However critics count it sillier
 Than jugglers talking to familiar ; 640
 We think 'tis no great matter which,
 They're all alike, yet we shall pitch
 On one that fits our purpose most,

Whom therefore thus do we accost.

Thou that with ale, or viler liquors, 645
 Didst inspire Withers, Pryn, and Vickars,
 And force them, though it was in spite
 Of Nature, and their stars, to write ;
 Who (as we find in sullen writs,
 And cross-grain'd works of modern wits) 650
 With vanity, opinion, want,
 The wonder of the ignorant,
 The praises of the author, penn'd
 B' himself or wit-insuring friend,
 The itch of picture in the front, 655
 With bays and wicked rhyme upon't,
 (All that is left o' th' Forked hill
 To make men scribble without skill)
 Canst make a poet, spite of Fate,
 And teach all people to translate, 660
 Though out of languages in which
 They understand no part of speech ;
 Assist me but this once, I 'mpleore,
 And I shall trouble thee no more.

In western clime there is a town, 665
 To those that dwell therein well known,
 Therefore there needs no more be said here,
 We unto them refer our reader ;
 For brevity is very good,
 When w' are, or are not understood. 670

⁶⁶⁵ Brentford, which is eight miles west from London, is here probably meant, as may be gathered from Part II. Cant. iii. v. 995, &c. where he tells the Knight what befell him there :

And though you overcame the Bear,
 The dogs beat you at Brentford fair,
 Where sturdy butchers broke your noddle.

To this town people did repair
 On days of market or of fair,
 And to crack'd fiddle and hoarse tabor,
 In merriment did drudge and labour :
 But now a sport more formidable 675
 Had rak'd together village rabble ;
 'Twas an old way of recreating,
 Which learned butchers call Bear-baiting ;
 A bold advent'rous exercise,
 With ancient heroes in high prize ; 680
 For authors do affirm it came
 From Isthmian or Nemæan game ;
 Others derive it from the Bear
 That's fix'd in northern hemisphere,
 And round about the pole does make 685
 A circle, like a bear at stake,
 That at the chain's end wheels about,
 And overturns the rabble-rout :
 For, after solemn proclamation
 In the bear's name (as is the fashion 690
 According to the law of arms,

⁶⁸⁷ This game is ushered into the Poem with more solemnity than those celebrated ones in Homer and Virgil. As the Poem is only adorned with this game, and the Riding Skimmington, so it was incumbent on the Poet to be very particular and full in the description : and may we not venture to affirm, they are exactly suitable to the nature of these adventures ; and, consequently, to a Briton, preferable to those in Homer or Virgil.

^{689 690} Alluding to the bull-running at Tutbury in Staffordshire ; where solemn proclamation was made by the Steward, before the bull was turned loose ; " That all manner of persons give way to the bull, none being to come near him by forty foot, any way to hinder the minstrels, but to attend his or their own safety, every one at his peril." Dr. Plot's ' Staffordshire.'

To keep men from inglorious harms)
 That none presume to come so near
 As forty foot of stake of bear,
 If any yet be so fool-hardy 695
 T' expose themselves to vain jeopardy,
 If they come wounded off, and lame,
 No honour's got by such a maim,
 Although the bear gain much, being bound
 In honour to make good his ground 700
 When he's engag'd, and takes no notice,
 If any press upon him, who 'tis,
 But lets them know, at their own cost,
 That he intends to keep his post.
 This to prevent and other harms 705
 Which always wait on feats of arms
 (For in the hurry of a fray
 'Tis hard to keep out of harm's way),
 Thither the Knight his course did steer,
 To keep the peace 'twixt Dog and Bear, 710
 As he believ'd he was bound to do
 In conscience and commission too ;
 And therefore thus bespoke the Squire :
 We that are wisely mounted higher
 Than constables in curule wit, 715

⁷¹⁴ This speech is set down as it was delivered by the Knight, in his own words ; but since it is below the gravity of heroical poetry to admit of humour, but all men are obliged to speak wisely alike, and too much of so extravagant a folly would become tedious and impertinent, the rest of his harangues have only his sense expressed in other words, unless in some few places where his own words could not be so well avoided.

⁷¹⁵ Had that remarkable motion in the House of Commons taken place, the constables might have vied with Sir Hudibras for an equality at least ; " That it was necessary

When on tribunal bench we sit,
 Like speculators should foresee,
 From Pharos of authority,
 Portended mischiefs further than
 Low Proletarian tithing-men ; 720
 And therefore being inform'd by bruit
 That Dog and Bear are to dispute,
 For so of late men fighting name,
 Because they often prove the same
 (For where the first does hap to be, 725
 The last does *coincidere*) ;
Quantum in nobis, have thought good
 To save th' expense of Christian blood,
 And try if we by mediation
 Of treaty and accommodation, 730
 Can end the quarrel, and compose
 The bloody duel without blows.
 Are not our liberties, our lives,
 The laws, religion, and our wives,
 Enough at once to lie at stake 735
 For Cov'nant and the Cause's sake ?
 But in that quarrel Dogs and Bears,

for the House of Commons to have a High Constable of their own, that will make no scruple of laying his Majesty by the heels :” but they proceeded not so far as to name any body, because Harry Martyn (out of tenderness of conscience in this particular) immediately quashed the motion, by saying, the power was too great for any man.

⁷³⁶ This was the Solemn League and Covenant, which was first framed and taken by the Scottish Parliament, and by them sent to the Parliament of England, in order to unite the two nations more closely in religion. It was received and taken by both Houses, and by the City of London ; and ordered to be read in all the churches throughout the kingdom ; and every person was bound to

As well as we, must venture theirs ?
 This feud, by Jesuits invented,
 By evil counsel is fomented ; 740
 There is a Machiavilian plot
 (Though ev'ry nare olfact it not)
 And deep design in't to divide
 The well-affected that confide,
 By setting brother against brother, 745
 To claw and curry one another.
 Have we not enemies *plus satis*,
 That *cane et angue pejus* hate us ?
 And shall we turn our fangs and claws
 Upon our own selves, without cause ? 750
 That some occult design doth lie
 In bloody cynarctomachy,
 Is plain enough to him that knows
 How Saints lead Brothers by the nose.
 I wish myself a pseudo-prophet, 755

give his consent, by holding up his hand, at the reading of it.

⁷³⁶ ' And the Cause's sake.' Sir William Dugdale informs us that Mr. Bond, preaching at the Savoy, told his auditors from the pulpit, "That they ought to contribute and pray, and do all they were able to bring in their brethren of Scotland for settling of God's cause: I say (quoth he) this is God's cause; and if our God hath any cause, this is it; and if this be not God's cause, then God is no God for me; but the Devil is got up into Heaven." Mr. Calamy, in his speech at Guildhall, 1643, says, "I may truly say, as the Martyr did, that if I had as many lives as hairs on my head, I would be willing to sacrifice all these lives in this cause;"

Which pluck'd down the King, the Church, and the Laws,
 To set up an idol, then nick-nam'd The Cause,
 Like Bell and the Dragon to gorge their own maws.

as it is expressed in "The Rump Carbonaded."

But sure some mischief will come of it,
 Unless by providential wit,
 Or force, we averruncate it.
 For what design, what interest,
 Can beast have to encounter beast ? 760
 They fight for no espoused Cause,
 Frail Privilege, Fundamental Laws,
 Nor for a thorough Reformation,
 Nor Covenant nor Protestation,
 Nor Liberty of consciences, 765
 Nor Lords' and Commons' Ordinances ;
 Nor for the Church, nor for Church-lands,
 To get them into their own hands ;
 Nor evil Counsellors to bring
 To justice, that seduce the King ; 770
 Nor for the worship of us men,
 Though we have done as much for them.
 Th' Egyptians worshipp'd dogs, and for
 Their faith made internecine war ;
 Others ador'd a rat, and some 775
 For that church suffer'd martyrdom ;
 The Indians fought for the truth
 Of th' elephant and monkey's tooth,
 And many, to defend that faith,

765 VAR. 'Nor for free Liberty of Conscience.' The word 'free' was left out in 1674 ; and Mr. Warburton thinks for the worse ; 'free liberty' being a most beautiful and satirical periphrasis for licentiousness, which is the idea the Author here intended to give us.

766 The King being driven from the Parliament, no legal acts of Parliament could be made ; therefore when the Lords and Commons had agreed upon any bill, they published it, and required obedience to it, under the title of An Ordinance of Lords and Commons, and sometimes, An Ordinance of Parliament.

Fought it out *mordicus* to death ; 780
 But no beast ever was so slight,
 For man, as for his God, to fight :
 They have more wit, alas ! and know
 Themselves and us better than so.
 But we, who only do infuse 785
 The rage in them like *boute-feus*,
 'Tis our example that instils
 In them th' infection of our ills.
 For, as some late philosophers
 Have well observ'd, beasts that converse 790
 With man take after him, as hogs
 Get pigs all th' year, and bitches dogs ;
 Just so, by our example, cattle
 Learn to give one another battle.
 We read in Nero's time, the Heathen, 795
 When they destroy'd the Christian brethren,
 They sew'd them in the skins of bears,
 And then set dogs about their ears ;
 From whence, no doubt, th' invention came
 Of this lewd antichristian game. 800

To this quoth Ralpho, verily
 The point seems very plain to me ;
 It is an antichristian game,
 Unlawful both in thing and name.
 First, for the name ; the word Bear-baiting 805
 Is carnal, and of man's creating,
 For certainly there's no such word
 In all the Scripture on record ;
 Therefore unlawful, and a sin :
 And so is (secondly) the thing ; 810
 A vile assembly 'tis, that can
 No more be proved by Scripture than
 Provincial, Classic, National,

Mere human creature cobwebs all.
 Thirdly, it is idolatrous ; 815
 For when men run a-whoring thus
 With their inventions, whatsoe'er
 The thing be, whether Dog or Bear,
 It is idolatrous and Pagan,
 No less than worshipping of Dagon. 820

Quoth Hudibras, I smell a rat ;
 Ralpho, thou dost prevaricate :
 For though the thesis which thou lay'st
 Be true *ad amussim*, as thou say'st ;
 (For that Bear-baiting should appear 825
Jure divino lawfuller
 Than Synods are, thou dost deny
Totidem verbis, so do I)
 Yet there's a fallacy in this ;
 For if by sly *homæosis*, 830
Tussis pro crepitu, an art
 Under a cough to slur a f—t,
 Thou wouldst sophistically imply
 Both are unlawful, I deny.

And I, quoth Ralpho, do not doubt 835
 But Bear-baiting may be made out,
 In gospel-times, as lawful as is
 Provincial, or Parochial Classis ;
 And that both are so near of kin,
 And like in all, as well as sin, 840
 That put 'em in a bag, and shake 'em,
 Yourself o' th' sudden would mistake 'em,
 And not know which is which, unless
 You measure by their wickedness ;
 For 'tis not hard t' imagine whether 845
 O' th' two is worst, tho' I name neither.

Quoth Hudibras, thou offer'st much,

But art not able to keep touch ;
Mira de lente, as 'tis i' th' adage,
Id est, to make a leek a cabbage : 850
 Thou wilt at best but suck a bull,
 Or shear swine, all cry and no wool ;
 For what can Synods have at all,
 With Bear that's analogical ?
 Or what relation has debating 855
 Of Church-affairs with Bear-baiting ?
 A just comparison still is
 Of things *ejusdem generis* ;
 And then what *genus* rightly doth
 Include and comprehend them both ? 860
 If animal, both of us may
 As justly pass for Bears as they ;
 For we are animals no less,
 Although of diff'rent specieses.
 But, Ralpho, this is no fit place, 865
 Nor time, to argue out the case ;
 For now the field is not far off
 Where we must give the world a proof
 Of deeds, not words, and such as suit
 Another manner of dispute : 870
 A controversy that affords
 Actions for arguments, not words ;
 Which we must manage at a rate
 Of prowess and conduct adequate
 To what our place and fame doth promise, 875

851 VAR. 'Thou canst at best but overstrain
 A paradox and thy own brain ;'

and 'Thou'lt be at best but such a bull,' &c.

860 VAR. 'Comprehend them inclusive both.'

862 VAR. 'As likely.'

And all the Godly expect from us.
 Nor shall they be deceiv'd, unless
 We're slurr'd and outed by success ;
 Success, the mark no mortal wit,
 Or surest hand, can always hit : 880
 For whatsoe'er we perpetrate,
 We do but row, w' are steer'd by Fate,
 Which in success oft disinherits,
 For spurious causes, noblest merits.
 Great actions are not always true sons 885
 Of great and mighty resolutions ;
 Nor do the bold'st attempts bring forth
 Events still equal to their worth ;
 But sometimes fail, and in their stead
 Fortune and cowardice succeed. 890
 Yet we have no great cause to doubt,
 Our actions still have borne us out ;
 Which though they're known to be so ample,
 We need not copy from example ;
 We're not the only person durst 895
 Attempt this province, nor the first.
 In northern clime a val'rous knight
 Did whilom kill his Bear in fight,
 And wound a Fiddler : we have both
 Of these the objects of our wrath, 900
 And equal fame and glory from
 Th' attempt, or victory to come.
 'Tis sung there is a valiant Mamaluke,
 In foreign land yclep'd—

⁹⁰⁴ The writers of the 'General Historical Dictionary,' vol. vi. p. 291, imagine, "That the chasm here is to be filled with the words 'Sir Samuel Luke,' because the line before it is of ten syllables, and the measure of the verse generally used in this Poem is of eight."

To whom we have been oft compar'd 905
For person, parts, address, and beard ;
Both equally reputed stout,
And in the same cause both have fought :
He oft in such attempts as these
Came off with glory and success ; 910
Nor will we fail in th' execution,
For want of equal resolution.
Honour is like a widow, won
With brisk attempt and putting on ;
With ent'ring manfully, and urging, 915
Not slow approaches, like a virgin.

 This said, as yerst the Phrygian knight,
So ours, with rusty steel did smite
His Trojan horse, and just as much
He mended pace upon the touch ; 920
But from his empty stomach groan'd
Just as that hollow beast did sound,
And angry answer'd from behind,
With brandish'd tail and blast of wind.
So have I seen, with armed heel, 925
A wight bestride a Commonweal,
While still the more he kick'd and spurr'd,
The less the sullen jade has stirr'd.

PART I. CANTO II.

THE ARGUMENT.

The catalogue and character
 Of th' enemies' best men of war,
 Whom in a bold harangue the Knight
 Defies and challenges to fight :
 H' encounters Talgol, routs the Bear,
 And takes the Fiddler prisoner,
 Conveys him to enchanted castle,
 There shuts him fast in wooden Bastile.

THERE was an ancient sage philosopher
 That had read Alexander Ross over,
 And swore the world, as he could prove,
 Was made of fighting and of love.
 Just so Romances are, for what else 5
 Is in them all but love and battles ?
 O' th' first of these w' have no great matter
 To treat of, but a world o' th' latter,
 In which to do the injured right
 We mean, in what concerns just fight. 10
 Certes our authors are to blame
 For to make some well-sounding name
 A pattern fit for modern knights
 To copy out in frays and fights
 (Like those that a whole street do raze 15
 To build a palace in the place).
 They never care how many others
 They kill, without regard of mothers,
 Or wives, or children, so they can
 Make up some fierce dead-doing man, 20

Compos'd of many ingredient valours,
 Just like the manhood of nine tailors :
 So a wild Tartar, when he spies
 A man that's handsome, valiant, wise,
 If he can kill him, thinks t' inherit 25
 His wit, his beauty, and his spirit ;
 As if just so much he enjoy'd,
 As in another is destroy'd :
 For when a giant's slain in fight,
 And mow'd o'erthwart, or cleft downright, 30
 It is a heavy case, no doubt,
 A man should have his brains beat out,
 Because he's tall and has large bones,
 As men kill beavers for their stones.
 But as for our part, we shall tell 35
 The naked truth of what befell,
 And as an equal friend to both
 The Knight and Bear, but more to Troth,
 With neither faction shall take part,
 But give to each his due desert, 40
 And never coin a formal lie on't
 To make the knight o'ercome the giant.
 This b'ing profest, we've hopes enough,
 And now go on where we left off.

They rode, but authors having not 45
 Determin'd whether pace or trot
 (That is to say, whether tollutation,
 As they do term 't, or succussation),
 We leave it, and go on, as now
 Suppose they did, no matter how ; 50
 Yet some, from subtle hints, have got
 Mysterious light it was a trot ;
 But let that pass : they now begun
 To spur their living engines on :

For as whipp'd tops and bandy'd balls, 55
 The learned hold, are animals ;
 So horses they affirm to be
 Mere engines made by Geometry,
 And were invented first from engines,
 As Indian Britains were from Penguins. 60
 So let them be, and, as I was saying,
 They their live engines ply'd, not staying
 Until they reach'd the fatal champain
 Which th' enemy did then encamp on ;
 The dire Pharsalian plain, where battle 65
 Was to be wag'd 'twixt puissant cattle,
 And fierce auxiliary men,
 That came to aid their brethren,
 Who now began to take the field,
 As Knight from ridge of steed beheld. 70
 For as our modern wits behold,
 Mounted a pick-back on the old,
 Much further off, much further he,
 Rais'd on his aged beast, could see ;
 Yet not sufficient to descry 75
 All postures of the enemy,
 Wherefore he bids the Squire ride further,
 T' observe their numbers and their order,
 That, when their motions he had known,
 He might know how to fit his own. 80
 Mean-while he stopp'd his willing steed,
 To fit himself for martial deed :
 Both kinds of metal he prepar'd,
 Either to give blows or to ward ;
 Courage and steel, both of great force, 85

⁷⁴ VAR. ' From off.'

⁸⁵ ⁸⁶ VAR. ' Courage within, and steel without,
 To give and to receive a rout.' .

Prepar'd for better or for worse.
 His death-charg'd pistols he did fit well,
 Drawn out from life-preserving vittle ;
 These being prim'd, with force he labour'd
 To free 's sword from retentive scabbard, 90
 And after many a painful pluck,
 From rusty durance he bail'd tuck :
 Then shook himself, to see that prowess
 In scabbard of his arms sat loose ;
 And, rais'd upon his desp'rate foot, 95
 On stirrup-side he gaz'd about,
 Portending blood, like blazing star,
 The beacon of approaching war.
 Ralpho rode on with no less speed
 Than Hugo in the forest did ; 100
 But far more in returning made,
 For now the foe he had survey'd,
 Rang'd, as to him they did appear,
 With van, main-battle, wings and rear.
 I' th' head of all this warlike rabble, 105
 Crowdero march'd expert and able ;

⁹² VAR. ' He clear'd at length the rugged tuck.'

⁹⁹ ¹⁰⁰ VAR. ' The Squire advanc'd with greater speed
 Than could b' expected from his steed :'

¹⁰¹ ¹⁰² VAR. But ' with a great deal' more ' return'd,'
 For now the foe he had ' discern'd.'

¹⁰⁶ So called from ' croud,' a fiddle : This was one Jackson, a milliner, who lived in the New Exchange in the Strand. He had formerly been in the service of the Round-heads, and had lost a leg in it ; this brought him to decay, so that he was obliged to scrape upon a fiddle, from one ale-house to another, for his bread. Mr. Butler very judiciously places him at the head of his catalogue : for country diversions are generally attended with a fiddler or bagpiper.

Instead of trumpet and of drum,
 That makes the warrior's stomach come,
 Whose noise whets valour sharp, like beer
 By thunder turn'd to vinegar ; 110
 (For if a trumpet sound or drum beat
 Who has not a month's mind to combat ?)
 A squeaking engine he apply'd
 Unto his neck, on north-east side,
 Just where the hangman does dispose 115
 To special friends the knot of noose :
 For 'tis great grace when statesmen straight
 Dispatch a friend, let others wait.
 His warped ear hung o'er the strings,
 Which was but souse to chitterlings : 120
 For guts, some write, ere they are sodden,
 Are fit for music or for pudden ;
 From whence men borrow ev'ry kind
 Of minstrelsy by string or wind.
 His grisly beard was long and thick, 125
 With which he strung his fiddlestick,
 For he to horse-tail scorn'd to owe
 For what on his own chin did grow :
 Chiron, the four-legg'd bard, had both
 A beard and tail of his own growth, 130
 And yet by authors 'tis averr'd
 He made use only of his beard.
 In Staffordshire, where virtuous worth
 Does raise the minstrelsy, not birth,
 Where bulls do choose the boldest king 135
 And ruler o'er the men of string
 (As once in Persia, 'tis said,
 Kings were proclaim'd by a horse that neigh'd),
 He, bravely vent'ring at a crown,
 By chance of war was beaten down, 140

And wounded sore ; his leg then broke
 Had got a deputy of oak :
 For when a shin in fight is cropt,
 The knee with one of timber's propt,
 Esteem'd more honourable than the other, 145
 And takes place, though the younger brother.

Next march'd brave Orsin, famous for
 Wise conduct and success in war ;
 A skilful leader, stout, severe,
 Now Marshal to the champion Bear. 150
 With truncheon tipp'd with iron head,
 The warrior to the lists he led ;
 With solemn march and stately pace,
 But far more grave and solemn face ;
 Grave as the emperor of Pegu, 155
 Or Spanish potentate, Don Diego.
 This leader was of knowledge great,
 Either for charge or for retreat ;
 He knew when to fall on pell-mell,
 To fall back and retreat as well : 160
 So lawyers, lest the Bear defendant
 And plaintiff Dog should make an end on't,
 Do stave and tail with writs of Error,
 Reverse of Judgment, and Demurrer,
 To let them breathe awhile, and then 165
 Cry Whoop and set them on agen.
 As Romulus a wolf did rear,
 So he was dry-nurs'd by a bear,
 That fed him with the purchas'd prey

¹⁴⁷ VAR. 'Next follow'd.' Joshua Gosling, who kept bears at Paris-garden, in Southwark. However, says Sir Roger, he stood hard and fast for the Rump Parliament.

¹⁵⁹ ¹⁶⁰ VAR. 'Knew when t' engage his bear pell-mell,
 And when to bring him off as well.'

Of many a fierce and bloody fray ; 170
 Bred up, where discipline most rare is,
 In military garden Paris :
 For soldiers heretofore did grow
 In gardens just as weeds do now,
 Until some splay-foot politicians 175
 T' Apollo offer'd up petitions
 For licensing a new invention
 Th' had found out of an antique engine,
 To root out all the weeds that grow
 In public gardens, at a blow, 180
 And leave th' herbs standing. Quoth Sir Sun,
 My friends, that is not to be done.
 Not done ! quoth Statesman ; Yes, an't please ye,
 When 'tis once known you'll say 'tis easy.
 Why then let's know it, quoth Apollo : 185
 We'll beat a drum, and they'll all follow.
 A drum ! (quoth Phoebus) Troth, that's true,
 A pretty invention, quaint and new :
 But though of voice and instrument
 We are th' undoubted president, 190
 We such loud music do not profess,
 The Devil's master of that office,
 Where it must pass ; if't be a drum,
 He'll sign it with *Cler. Parl. Dom. Com.* ;
 To him apply yourselves, and he 195
 Will soon dispatch you for his fee.
 They did so, but it prov'd so ill
 Th' had better let 'em grow there still.
 But to resume what we discoursing

¹⁹⁴ The House of Commons, even before the Rump had murdered the King, and expelled the House of Lords, usurped many branches of the Royal prerogative, and particularly this for granting licenses for new inventions.

Were on before, that is, stout Orsin : 200
 That which so oft by sundry writers
 Has been apply'd t' almost all fighters,
 More justly may b' ascrib'd to this
 Than any other warrior, (viz.)
 None ever acted both parts bolder, 205
 Both of a chieftain and a soldier.
 He was of great descent, and high
 For splendour and antiquity,
 And from celestial origine
 Deriv'd himself in a right line : 210
 Not as the ancient heroes did,
 Who, that their base births might be hid
 (Knowing they were of doubtful gender,
 And that they came in at a windore),
 Made Jupiter himself and others 215
 O' th' gods gallants to their own mothers,
 To get on them a race of champions,
 (Of which old Homer first made lampoons).
 Arctophylax, in northern sphere,
 Was his undoubted ancestor ; 220
 From him his great forefathers came,
 And in all ages bore his name.
 Learned he was in med'c'nal lore,
 For by his side a pouch he wore
 Replete with strange hermetic powder, 225
 That wounds nine miles point-blank would solder ;
 By skilful chemist with great cost
 Extracted from a rotten post ;
 But of a heav'nlier influence
 Than that which mountebanks dispense, 230
 Though by Promethean fire made ;

²¹¹ This is one instance of the Author's making great things little, though his talent lay chiefly the other way.

As they do quack that drive that trade.
 For as, when slovens do amiss
 At others' doors, by stool or piss,
 The learned write a red-hot spit 235
 B'ing prudently apply'd to it
 Will convey mischief from the dung
 Unto the part that did the wrong,
 So this did healing; and, as sure
 As that did mischief, this would cure. 240

Thus virtuous Orsin was endu'd
 With learning, conduct, fortitude
 Incomparable; and as the prince
 Of poets, Homer, sung long since,
 A skilful leech is better far 245
 Than half a hundred men of war;
 So he appear'd, and by his skill,
 No less than dint of sword, could kill.

The gallant Bruin march'd next him,
 With visage formidably grim, 250
 And rugged as a Saracen,
 Or Turk of Mahomet's own kin;
 Clad in a mantle *delle guerre*
 Of rough impenetrable fur,
 And in his nose, like Indian king, 255
 He wore, for ornament, a ring;
 About his neck a threefold gorget,
 As rough as trebled leathern target;
 Armed, as heralds, cant and langued,
 Or, as the vulgar say, sharp-fanged: 260
 For as the teeth in beasts of prey
 Are swords, with which they fight in fray,
 So swords, in men of war, are teeth

Which they do eat their vittle with.
 He was by birth, some authors write, 265
 A Russian, some a Muscovite,
 And 'mong the Cossacks had been bred,
 Of whom we in Diurnals read,
 That serve to fill up pages here,
 As with their bodies ditches there. 270
 Scrimansky was his cousin-german,
 With whom he serv'd, and fed on vermin ;
 And when these fail'd he'd suck his claws,
 And quarter himself upon his paws :
 And though his countrymen, the Huns, 275
 Did stew their meat between their bums
 And th' horses' backs o'er which they straddle,
 And ev'ry man ate up his saddle ;
 He was not half so nice as they,
 But ate it raw when 't came in 's way. 280
 H' had trac'd the countries far and near
 More than Le Blanc the traveller,
 Who writes, he spous'd in India,
 Of noble house a lady gay,
 And got on her a race of worthies 285
 As stout as any upon earth is.
 Full many a fight for him between
 Talgol and Orsin oft had been,
 Each striving to deserve the crown
 Of a sav'd citizen ; the one 290
 To guard his Bear, the other fought
 To aid his Dog ; both made more stout
 By sev'ral spurs of neighbourhood,
 Church-fellow-membership, and blood :
 But Talgol, mortal foe to cows, 295
 Never got aught of him but blows,
 Blows hard and heavy, such as he

Had lent, repaid with usury.

Yet Talgol was of courage stout,
 And vanquish'd oft'ner than he fought; 300
 Inur'd to labour, sweat and toil,
 And, like a champion, shone with oil:
 Right many a widow his keen blade,
 And many fatherless, had made;
 He many a boar and huge dun-cow 305
 Did, like another Guy, o'erthrow:
 But Guy with him in fight compar'd,
 Had like the boar or dun-cow far'd.
 With greater troops of sheep h' had fought
 Than Ajax or bold Don Quixote; 310
 And many a serpent of fell kind,
 With wings before and stings behind,
 Subdu'd; as, poets say, long ago
 Bold Sir George Saint George did the Dragon.
 Nor engine, nor device polemic, 315
 Disease, nor doctor epidemic,
 Though stor'd with deletery med'cines,
 (Which whosoever took is dead since)
 E'er sent so vast a colony
 To both the under worlds as he; 320
 For he was of that noble trade
 That demi-gods and heroes made,
 Slaughter, and knocking on the head,
 The trade to which they all were bred;
 And is, like others, glorious when 325
 'Tis great and large, but base, if mean:
 The former rides in triumph for it,
 The latter in a two-wheel'd chariot,

²⁹⁹ A butcher in Newgate-market, who afterwards obtained a captain's commission for his rebellious bravery at Naseby, as Sir R. L'Estrange observes.

For daring to profane a thing
So sacred with vile bungling. 350

Next these the brave Magnano came,
Magnano great in martial fame ;
Yet when with Orsin he wag'd fight,
'Tis sung he got but little by 't :
Yet he was fierce as forest boar, 335
Whose spoils upon his back he wore,
As thick as Ajax' sevenfold shield,
Which o'er his brazen arms he held :
But brass was feeble to resist
The fury of his armed fist, 340
Nor could the hardest iron hold out
Against his blows, but they would through 't.

In magic he was deeply read,
As he that made the brazen-head ;
Profoundly skill'd in the black art, 345
As English Merlin for his heart ;
But far more skilful in the spheres
Than he was at the sieve and shears.
He could transform himself in colour,
As like the Devil as a collier ; 350
As like the hypocrites in show
Are to true saints, or crow to crow.

Of warlike engines he was author,
Devis'd for quick dispatch of slaughter :
The cannon, blunderbuss, and saker, 355
He was th' inventor of, and maker :
The trumpet and the kettle-drum
Did both from his invention come.

³³¹ Simeon Wait a tinker, as famous an Independent preacher as Burroughs, who, with equal blasphemy to his Lord of Hosts, would style Oliver Cromwell the Archangel giving battle to the Devil.

He was the first that e'er did teach
To make, and how to stop a breach. 360

A lance he bore with iron pike,
Th' one half would thrust, the other strike ;
And when their forces he had join'd,
He scorn'd to turn his parts behind.

He Trulla lov'd, Trulla more bright 365
Than burnish'd armour of her knight ;

A bold virago, stout and tall,
As Joan of France, or English Mall :
Through perils both of wind and limb,
Through thick and thin she follow'd him, 370

In ev'ry adventure h' undertook,
And never him or it forsook :

At breach of wall, or hedge surprize,
She shar'd i' th' hazard and the prize ;

At beating quarters up, or forage, 375
Behav'd herself with matchless courage.

And laid about in fight more busily
Than th' Amazonian Dame Penthesile.

And though some critics here cry shame,
And say our authors are to blame, 380

That (spite of all philosophers,
Who hold no females stout but bears,

And heretofore did so abhor

³⁶⁵ The daughter of James Spenser, debauched by Magnano the tinker ; so called because the tinker's wife or mistress was commonly called his 'trull.' See "The Coxcomb," a comedy.

³⁶⁸ Alluding probably to Mary Carlton, called 'Kentish Moll,' but more commonly 'The German Princess;' a person notorious at the time this First Part of Hudibras was published. She was transported to Jamaica, 1671, but returning from transportation too soon, she was hanged at Tyburn, Jan. 22, 1672-3.

That women should pretend to war,
 They would not suffer the stout'st dame 385
 To swear by Hercules's name)
 Make feeble ladies, in their works,
 To fight like termagants and Turks ;
 To lay their native arms aside,
 Their modesty, and ride astride ; 390
 To run a-tilt at men, and wield
 Their naked tools in open field ;
 As stout Armida, bold Thalestris,
 And she that would have been the mistress
 Of Gundibert, but he had grace, 395
 And rather took a country lass ;
 They say 'tis false without all sense,
 But of pernicious consequence
 To government, which they suppose
 Can never be upheld in prose ; 400
 Strip Nature naked to the skin,
 You'll find about her no such thing :
 It may be so, yet what we tell
 Of Trulla that's improbable,
 Shall be depos'd by those have seen 't, 405
 Or, what's as good, produc'd in print ;
 And if they will not take our word,
 We'll prove it true upon record.
 The upright Cerdon next advanc't,
 Of all his race the valiant'st ; 410

⁴⁰⁹ 'Cerdon.' A one-eyed cobbler, like his brother Colonel Hewson. The poet observes that his chief talent lay in preaching. Is it not then indecent, and beyond the rules of decorum, to introduce him into such rough company? No: it is probable he had but newly set up the trade of a teacher, and we may conclude that the poet did not think that he had so much sanctity as to debar him the pleasure of his beloved diversion of bear-baiting.

Cerdon the Great, renown'd in song,
 Like Herc'les, for repair of wrong :
 He rais'd the low, and fortify'd
 The weak against the strongest side :
 Ill has he read that never hit 415
 On him in Muses' deathless writ.
 He had a weapon keen and fierce,
 That through a bull-hide shield would pierce,
 And cut it in a thousand pieces,
 Though tougher than the Knight of Greece his, 420
 With whom his black-thumb'd ancestor
 Was comrade in the ten-years' war :
 For when the restless Greeks sat down
 So many years before Troy town,
 And were renown'd, as Homer writes, 425
 For well-sol'd boots no less than fights,
 They ow'd that glory only to
 His ancestor, that made them so.
 Fast friend he was to reformation,
 Until 'twas worn quite out of fashion ; 430
 Next rectifier of wry law,
 And would make three to cure one flaw.
 Learned he was, and could take note,
 Transcribe, collect, translate, and quote :
 But preaching was his chiefest talent, 435

⁴³⁵ Mechanics of all sorts were then preachers, and some of them much followed and admired by the mob. "I am to tell thee, Christian Reader," says Dr. Featley, Preface to his "Dipper Dipped," wrote 1645, and published 1647, p. 1, "this new year of new changes, never heard of in former ages, namely, of stables turned into temples, and, I will beg leave to add, temples turned into stables (as was that of St. Paul's, and many more), stalls into quires, shop-boards into communion-tables, tubs into pulpits, aprons into linen ephods, and mechanics of the low-

Or argument, in which being valiant,
 He us'd to lay about and stickle,
 Like ram or bull, at Conventicle :
 For disputants, like rams and bulls,
 Do fight with arms that spring from sculls. 440

Last Colon came, bold man of war,
 Destin'd to blows by fatal star,
 Right expert in command of horse,
 But cruel, and without remorse.

est rank into priests of the high places.—I wonder that our door-posts and walls sweat not, upon which such notes as these have been lately affixed ; on such a day such a brewer's clerk exerciseth, such a tailor expoundeth, such a waterman teacheth.—If cooks, instead of mincing their meat, fall upon dividing of the Word ; if tailors leap up from the shop-board into the pulpit, and patch up sermons out of stolen shreds ; if not only of the lowest of the people, as in Jeroboam's time, priests are consecrated to the Most High God—do we marvel to see such confusion in the Church as there is?" They are humorously girded in a tract entitled, 'The Reformado precisely character'd, by a modern Churchwarden,' p. 11. "Here are felt-makers," says he, "who can roundly deal with the blockheads and neutral dimicasters of the world ; cobblers who can give good rules for upright walking, and handle Scripture to a bristle ; coachmen who know how to lash the beastly enormities, and curb the head-strong insolences of this brutish age, stoutly exhorting us to stand up for the truth, lest the wheel of destruction roundly overrun us. We have weavers that can sweetly inform us of the shuttle swiftness of the times, and practically tread out the vicissitude of all sublunary things, till the web of our life be cut off : and here are mechanics of my profession who can separate the pieces of salvation from those of damnation, measure out every man's portion, and cut it out by a thread, substantially pressing the points, till they have fashionably filled up their work with a well-bottomed conclusion."

⁴⁴¹ 'Colon.' Ned Perry, an hostler.

That which of Centaur long ago 445
Was said, and has been wrested to
Some other knights, was true of this ;
He and his horse were of a piece.
One spirit did inform them both,
The self-same vigour, fury, wroth ; 450
Yet he was much the rougher part,
And always had a harder heart,
Although his horse had been of those
That fed on man's flesh, as fame goes :
Strange food for horse ! and yet, alas ! 455
It may be true, for flesh is grass.
Sturdy he was, and no less able
Than Hercules to clean a stable ;
As great a drover, and as great
A critic too, in hog or neat. 460
He ripp'd the womb up of his mother,
Dame Tellus, 'cause she wanted fother
And provender, wherewith to feed
Himself and his less cruel steed.
It was a question whether he 465
Or 's horse were of a family
More worshipful ; till antiquaries
(After they'd almost por'd out their eyes)
Did very learnedly decide
The bus'ness on the horse's side, 470
And prov'd not only horse, but cows,
Nay pigs, were of the elder house :
For beasts, when man was but a piece
Of earth himself, did th' earth possess.
These worthies were the chief that led 475
The combatants, each in the head
Of his command, with arms and rage
Ready and longing to engage.

The num'rous rabble was drawn out
 Of sev'ral counties round about, 480
 From villages remote, and shires
 Of east and western hemispheres.
 From foreign parishes and regions,
 Of different manners, speech, religions,
 Came men and mastiffs ; some to fight 485
 For fame and honour, some for sight.
 And now the field of death, the lists,
 Were enter'd by antagonists,
 And blood was ready to be broach'd,
 When Hudibras in haste approach'd, 490
 With Squire and weapons to attack 'em ;
 But first thus from his horse bespake 'em.

What rage, O Citizens ! what fury,
 Doth you to these dire actions hurry ?
 What oestrum, what phrenetic mood, 495
 Makes you thus lavish of your blood,
 While the proud Vies your trophies boast,
 And unreveng'd walks Waller's ghost ?
 What towns, what garrisons, might you
 With hazard of this blood subdue, 500
 Which now y' are bent to throw away
 In vain untriumphable fray ?
 Shall saints in civil bloodshed wallow
 Of saints, and let the cause lie fallow ?
 The cause, for which we fought and swore 505
 So boldly, shall we now give o'er ?

⁴⁹⁵ ' Oestrum' signifies the gad-bee or horse-fly.

⁴⁹⁷ Sir W. Waller was defeated at the Devises.

⁵⁰³ ⁵⁰⁴ Mr. Walker observes, " That all the cheating, covetous, ambitious persons of the land were united together under the title of the Godly, the Saints, and shared the fat of the land between them ;" and he calls them the Saints who were canonized no-where but in the Devil's Calendar.

Then, because quarrels still are seen
 With oaths and swearings to begin,
 The Solemn League and Covenant
 Will seem a mere God-dam-me rant, 510
 And we that took it, and have fought,
 As lewd as drunkards that fall out :
 For as we make war for the King
 Against himself, the self-same thing,
 Some will not stick to swear, we do 515
 For God and for Religion too :
 For, if Bear-baiting we allow,
 What good can Reformation do ?
 The blood and treasure that's laid out
 Is thrown away, and goes for nought. 520
 Are these the fruits o' th' Protestation,
 The prototype of Reformation,
 Which all the saints, and some, since martyrs,
 Wore in their hats like wedding-garters,
 When 'twas resolved by either House 525
 Six Members' quarrel to espouse ?
 Did they for this draw down the rabble,
 With zeal and noises formidable,
 And make all cries about the town
 Join throats to cry the Bishops down ? 530

513 514 The Presbyterians, in all their wars against the king, maintained still that they fought for him ; for they pretended to distinguish his political person from his natural one : his political person, they said, must be, and was with the Parliament, though his natural person was at war with them.

530 " Good Lord ! " (says the ' True Informer,' p. 12.) " what a deal of dirt was thrown in the Bishops' faces !—what infamous ballads were sung !—what a thick cloud of epidemical hatred hung suddenly over them ! so far, that a dog with a black and white face was called a ' Bishop.' "

Who having round begirt the palace,
 (As once a month they do the gallows),
 As Members gave the sign about,
 Set up their throats with hideous shout.
 When tinkers bawl'd aloud to settle 535
 Church-Discipline, for patching kettle ;
 No sow-gelder did blow his horn
 To geld a cat, but cry'd Reform ;
 The oyster-women lock'd their fish up,
 And trudg'd away to cry No Bishop ; 540
 The mouse-trap men laid save-all's by,
 And 'gainst Ev'l Counsellors did cry ;
 Botchers left old clothes in the lurch,
 And fell to turn and patch the Church ;
 Some cry'd the Covenant, instead 545
 Of pudding-pies and gingerbread ;
 And some for brooms, old boots and shoes,
 Bawl'd out to purge the Common-House ;
 Instead of kitchen-stuff, some cry
 A Gospel-preaching ministry ; 550
 And some for old suits, coats, or cloak,
 No Surplices nor Service-book :
 A strange harmonious inclination
 Of all degrees to Reformation.
 And is this all? Is this the end 555
 To which these Carr'ings on did tend ?
 Hath Public faith, like a young heir,
 For this tak'n up all sorts of ware,

553 554 Those flights, which seem most extravagant in our Poet, were really excelled by matter of fact. The Scots (in their 'Large Declaration,' 1637, p. 41.) begin their petition against the Common Prayer-Book thus:—"We men, women, and children, and servants, having considered, &c." 'Foulis's Hist. of Wicked Plots.'

And run int' ev'ry tradesman's book,
 Till both turn'd bankrupts and are broke? 560
 Did Saints for this bring in their plate,
 And crowd as if they came too late?
 For, when they thought the cause had need on't,
 Happy was he that could be rid on't.
 Did they coin piss-pots, bowls, and flaggons, 565
 Int' officers of horse and dragoons?
 And into pikes and musqueteers
 Stamp beakers, cups, and porringers?
 A thimble, bodkin, and a spoon,
 Did start up living men as soon 570
 As in the furnace they were thrown,
 Just like the dragon's teeth being sown.
 Then was the Cause of gold and plate,
 The Brethrens' off'rings, consecrate,
 Like th' Hebrew calf, and down before it 575
 The Saints fell prostrate, to adore it:
 So say the Wicked—and will you
 Make that sarcasmus scandal true
 By running after Dogs and Bears,
 Beasts more unclean than calves or steers? 580
 Have pow'rful Preachers ply'd their tongues,
 And laid themselves out and their lungs;
 Us'd all means, both direct and sinister,
 I' th' pow'r of Gospel-preaching Minister?
 Have they invented tones to win 585
 The women and make them draw in
 The men, as Indians with a female
 Tame elephant inveigle the male?
 Have they told Prov'dence what it must do,

⁵⁸⁹ It was a common practice to inform God of the transactions of the times. "Oh! my Good Lord God," says Mr. G. Swathe, 'Prayers,' p. 12, "I hear the King

Whom to avoid, and whom to trust to ? 590
 Discover'd th' Enemy's design,
 And which way best to countermine ?
 Prescrib'd what ways it hath to work,
 Or it will ne'er advance the Kirk ?
 Told it the news o' th' last express, 595
 And after good or bad success
 Made prayers, not so like petitions
 As overtures and propositions

hath set up his standard at York against the Parliament and city of London.—Look thou upon them, take their cause into thine own hand; appear thou in the cause of thy Saints, the cause in hand.—It is thy cause, Lord. We know that the King is misled, deluded, and deceived by his Popish, Arminian, and temporising, rebellious, malignant faction and party," &c. "They would," says Dr. Echard, "in their prayers and sermons, tell God, that they would be willing to be at any charge and trouble for him, and to do as it were any kindness for the Lord; the Lord might now trust them, and rely upon them, they should not fail him; they should not be unmindful of his business; his works should not stand still, nor his designs be neglected. They must needs say that they had formerly received some favours from God, and have been as it were beholden to the Almighty; but they did not much question but they should find some opportunity of making some amends for the many good things, and (as I may so say) civilities which they had received from him. Indeed, as for those that are weak in the Faith, and are yet but babes in Christ, it is fit that they should keep at some distance from God, should kneel before him, and stand (as I may say) cap in hand to the Almighty: but as for those that are strong in all Gifts, and grown up in all Grace, and are come to a fulness and ripeness in the Lord Jesus, it is comely enough to take a great chair, and sit at the end of the table, and, with their cock'd hats on their heads, to say, God, we thought it not amiss to call upon thee this evening, and let thee know how affairs stand. We have been very watch-

(Such as the Army did present
 To their Creator, th' Parl'ament), 600
 In which they freely will confess
 They will not, cannot acquiesce,
 Unless the Work be carry'd on
 In the same way they have begun,
 By setting Church and Commonweal 605
 All on a flame, bright as their zeal,
 On which the Saints were all agog,
 And all this for a Bear and Dog?

ful since we were last with thee, and they are in a very hopeful condition. We hope that thou wilt not forget us; for we are very thoughtful of thy concerns. We do somewhat long to hear from thee; and if thou pleasest to give us such a thing ('Victory'), we shall be (as I may so say) good to thee in something else when it lies in our way." See a remarkable Scotch Prayer much to the same purpose, 'Scourge,' by Mr. Lewis, No. XVI. p. 130, edit. 1717.

⁶⁰² Alluding probably to their profane expostulations with God from the pulpit. Mr. Vines, in St. Clement's Church, near Temple-bar, used the following words: "O Lord, thou hast never given us a victory this long while, for all our frequent fasting. What dost thou mean, O Lord, to fling into a ditch, and there to leave us?" And one Robinson, in his prayer at Southampton, Aug. 25, 1642, expressed himself in the following manner: "O God, O God, many are the hands that are lift up against us, but there is one God, it is thou thyself, O Father, who does us more mischief than they all." They seemed to encourage this profanity in their public sermons. "Gather upon God," says Mr. R. Harris, 'Fast Sermon before the Commons,' "and hold him to it, as Jacob did: press him with his precepts, with his promises, with his hand, with his seal, with his oath, till we do *δυσωπειν*, as some Greek Fathers boldly speak; that is, if I may speak it reverently enough, put the Lord out of countenance; put him, as you would say, to the blush, unless we be masters of our requests."

The Parl'ament drew up petitions
 To 'tself, and sent them, like commissions, 610
 To well-affected persons down,
 In every city and great town,
 With pow'r to levy horse and men,
 Only to bring them back agen?
 For this did many, many a mile, 615
 Ride manfully in rank and file,
 With papers in their hats, that show'd
 As if they to the pill'ry rode?
 Have all these courses, these efforts,
 Been try'd by people of all sorts, 620
Velis et remis, omnibus nervis,
 And all t' advance the Cause's service;
 And shall all now be thrown away
 In petulent intestine fray?
 Shall we, that in the Cov'nant swore 625
 Each man of us to run before
 Another, still in Reformation
 Give Dogs and Bears a dispensation?
 How will Dissenting Brethren relish it?
 What will Malignants say? *Videlicet,* 630
 That each man swore to do his best
 To damn and perjure all the rest;
 And bid the devil take the hin'most,
 Which at this race is like to win most.
 They'll say our bus'ness to Reform 635
 The Church and State, is but a worm;
 For to subscribe, unsight unseen,
 To an unknown Church discipline,
 What is it else but beforehand
 T' engage and after understand? 640
 For when we swore to carry on
 The present Reformation,

According to the purest mode
 Of churches best reform'd abroad,
 What did we else but make a vow 645
 To do we know not what, nor how?
 For no three of us will agree
 Where, or what churches these should be :
 And is indeed the self-same case
 With those that swore *et cæteras* ; 650
 Or the French League, in which men vow'd
 To fight to the last drop of blood.
 These slanders will be thrown upon
 The cause and work we carry on,
 If we permit men to run headlong 655
 T' exorbitances fit for bedlam,
 Rather than gospel-walking times,
 When slightest sins are greatest crimes.
 But we the matter so shall handle
 As to remove that odious scandal : 660
 In name of King and Parl'ament,
 I charge ye all, no more foment
 This feud, but keep the peace between
 Your brethren and your countrymen,
 And to those places straight repair 665
 Where your respective dwellings are.

⁶⁵¹ The Holy League in France, designed and made for the extirpation of the Protestant religion, was the original out of which the Solemn League and Covenant here was (with difference only of circumstances) most faithfully transcribed. Nor did the success of both differ more than the intent and purpose ; for, after the destruction of vast numbers of people of all sorts, both ended with the murder of two kings, whom they had both sworn to defend. And as our Covenanters swore every man to run one before another in the way of Reformation, so did the French, in the Holy League, to fight to the last drop of blood.

But to that purpose first surrender
 The Fiddler, as the prime offender,
 Th' incendiary vile, that is chief
 Author and engineer of mischief; 670
 That makes division between friends,
 For profane and malignant ends.
 He, and that engine of vile noise
 On which illegally he plays,
 Shall (*dictum factum*) both be brought 675
 To condign pun'shment, as they ought:
 This must be done, and I would fain see
 Mortal so sturdy as to gainsay;
 For then I'll take another course,
 And soon reduce you all by force. 680
 This said, he clapt his hand on sword,
 To shew he meant to keep his word.

But Talgol, who had long suppress
 Inflamed wrath in glowing breast,

673-676 The threatening punishment to the Fiddle was much like the threats of the pragmatical troopers to punish Ralph Dobbin's waggon, 'Plain Dealer,' vol. i. "I was driving," says he, "into a town upon the 29th of May, where my waggon was to dine. There came up in a great rage seven or eight of the troopers that were quartered there, and asked, 'What I bushed out my horses for?' I told them, 'To drive flies away.' But they said, I was a Jacobite rascal, that my horses were guilty of high treason, and my waggon ought to be hanged. I answered, 'it was already drawn, and within a yard or two of being quartered; but as to being hanged, it was a compliment we had no occasion for, and therefore desired them to take it back again, and keep it in their own hands, till they had an opportunity to make use of it.' I had no sooner spoke these words, but they fell upon me like thunder, stript my cattle in a twinkling, and beat me black and blue with my own oak branches."

683 684 It may be asked, Why Talgol was the first in

Which now began to rage and burn as 685
 Implacably as flame in furnace,
 Thus answer'd him : Thou vermin wretched,
 As e'er in measled pork was hatched ;
 Thou tail of worship, that dost grow
 On rump of justice as of cow ; 690
 How dar'st thou with that sullen luggage
 O' th' self, old ir'n, and other baggage,
 With which thy steed of bones and leather
 Has broke his wind in halting hither,
 How durst th', I say, adventure thus 695
 T' oppose thy lumber against us ?
 Could thine impertinence find out
 No work t' employ itself about,
 Where thou, secure from wooden blow,
 Thy busy vanity might'st show ? 700
 Was no dispute a-foot between
 The caterwauling Bretheren ?
 No subtle question rais'd among
 Those out-o'-their wits and those i' th' wrong !
 No prize between those combatants 705
 O' th' times, the land and water saints,
 Where thou might'st stickle, without hazard
 Of outrage to thy hide and mazzard,
 And not for want of bus'ness come
 To us to be thus troublesome, 710
 To interrupt our better sort
 Of disputants, and spoil our sport ?

answering the Knight, when it seems more incumbent upon the Bearward to make a defence? Probably Talgol might then be a Cavalier; for the character the Poet has given him doth not infer the contrary, and his answer carries strong indications to justify the conjecture.

⁶⁹⁴ VAR. 'Is lam'd, and tir'd in halting hither.'

Was there no felony, no bawd,
 Cut-purse, or burglary abroad?
 No stolen pig, nor plunder'd goose, 715
 To tie thee up from breaking loose?
 No ale unlicens'd, broken hedge,
 For which thou statute might'st allege,
 To keep thee busy from foul evil
 And shame due to thee from the devil? 720
 Did no Committee sit, where he
 Might cut out journey-work for thee,
 And set th' a task, with subornation,
 To stitch up sale and sequestration;
 To cheat, with holiness and zeal, 725
 All parties and the commonweal?
 Much better had it been for thee
 He 'ad kept thee where th' art us'd to be,
 Or sent th' on bus'ness any whither,
 So he had never brought thee hither: 730
 But if th' hast brain enough in scull
 To keep itself in lodging whole,
 And not provoke the rage of stones
 And cudgels to thy hide and bones,
 Tremble, and vanish while thou may'st, 735
 Which I'll not promise if thou stay'st.
 At this the knight grew high in wroth,
 And, lifting hands and eyes up both,
 Three times he smote on stomach stout,
 From whence, at length, these words broke out:
 Was I for this entitled Sir, 741

⁷³² VAR. 'To keep within its lodging.'

⁷⁴¹ Hudibras shewed less patience upon this than Don Quixote did upon a like occasion, where he calmly dis-

And girt with trusty sword and spur,
 For fame and honour to wage battle,
 Thus to be brav'd by foe to cattle?
 Not all that pride that makes thee swell 745
 As big as thou dost blown-up veal;
 Nor all thy tricks and sleights to cheat,
 And sell thy carrion for good meat;
 Not all thy magic to repair
 Decay'd old age in tough lean ware, 750
 Make nat'ral death appear thy work,
 And stop the gangrene in stale pork;
 Not all the force that makes thee proud,
 Because by bullock ne'er withstood;
 Though arm'd with all thy cleavers, knives, 755
 And axes, made to hew down lives;
 Shall save or help thee to evade
 The hand of Justice, or this blade,
 Which I, her sword-bearer, do carry,
 For civil deed and military. 760
 Nor shall these words of venom base,
 Which thou hast from their native place,
 Thy stomach, pump'd to fling on me,
 Go unreveng'd, though I am free;
 Thou down the same throat shalt devour 'em, 765
 Like tainted beef, and pay dear for 'em:
 Nor shall it e'er be said that wight

tinguishes betwixt an affront and an injury. The Knight is irritated at the satirical answer of Talgol, and vents his rage in a manner exactly suited to his character; and when his passion was worked up to a height too great to be expressed in words, he immediately falls into action; but, alas! at this first entrance into it, he meets with an unlucky disappointment; an omen that the success would be as indifferent as the cause in which he was engaged.

751 VAR. 'Turn death of nature to thy work.'

With gauntlet blue and bases white,
 And round blunt truncheon by his side,
 So great a man at arms defy'd 770
 With words far bitterer than wormwood,
 That would in Job or Grizel stir mood.
 Dogs with their tongues their wounds do heal,
 But men with hands, as thou shalt feel.
 This said, with hasty rage he snatch'd 775
 His gun-shot that in holsters watch'd,
 And, bending cock, he levell'd full
 Against th' outside of Talgol's scull,
 Vowing that he should ne'er stir further,
 Nor henceforth cow or bullock murder : 780
 But Pallas came in shape of Rust,
 And 'twixt the spring and hammer thrust
 Her Gorgon shield, which made the cock
 Stand stiff, as 'twere transform'd to stock.
 Mean-while fierce Talgol, gath'ring might, 785
 With rugged truncheon charg'd the Knight :

⁷⁸¹ ⁷⁸³ This, and another passage in this Canto, are the only places where Deities are introduced in this poem. As it was not intended for an Epic Poem, consequently none of the heroes in it needed supernatural assistance ; how then comes Pallas to be ushered in here, and Mars afterwards ? Probably to ridicule Homer and Virgil, whose heroes scarce perform any action (even the most feasible) without the sensible aid of a Deity ; and to manifest that it was not the want of abilities, but choice, that made our Poet avoid such subterfuges, he has given us a sample of his judgment in this way of writing in the passage before us, which, taken in its naked meaning, is only—that the Knight's pistol was, for want of use, grown so rusty, that it would not fire ; or, in other words, that the rust was the cause of his disappointment.

⁷⁸⁴ VAR. ' Stand stiff, as if 'twere turn'd t' a stock.'

⁷⁸⁶ VAR. ' Smote the Knight.'

But he, with petronel upheav'd
 Instead of shield, the blow receiv'd ;
 The gun recoil'd, as well it might,
 Not us'd to such a kind of fight, 790
 And shrunk from its great master's gripe,
 Knock'd down and stunn'd with mortal stripe.
 Then Hudibras, with furious haste,
 Drew out his sword ; yet not so fast
 But Talgol first, with hardy thwack, 795
 Twice bruis'd his head, and twice his back.
 But when his nut-brown sword was out,
 With stomach huge he laid about,
 Imprinting many a wound upon
 His mortal foe, the truncheon : 800
 The trusty cudgel did oppose
 Itself against dead-doing blows,
 To guard his leader from fell bane,
 And then reveng'd itself again.
 And though the sword (some understood) 805
 In force had much the odds of wood,
 'Twas nothing so ; both sides were balanc't
 So equal, none knew which was valiant'st :
 For wood, with honour b'ing engag'd,
 Is so implacably enrag'd, 810
 Though iron hew and mangle sore,
 Wood wounds and bruises honour more.
 And now both knights were out of breath,
 Tir'd in the hot pursuits of death,
 Whilst all the rest amaz'd stood still, 815
 Expecting which should take, or kill.

767 768 VAR. ' And he with rusty pistol held...
 To take the blow on like a shield.'

797 VAR. ' But when his rugged sword was out.'

798 VAR. ' Courageously he laid about.'

This Hudibras observ'd ; and fretting
 Conquest should be so long a-getting,
 He drew up all his force into
 One body, and that into one blow : 820
 But Talgol wisely avoided it
 By cunning sleight ; for, had it hit,
 The upper part of him the blow
 Had slit, as sure as that below.

Meanwhile th' incomparable Colon, 825
 To aid his friend, began to fall on :
 Him Ralph encounter'd, and straight grew
 A dismal combat 'twixt them two ;
 Th' one arm'd with metal, th' other with wood,
 This fit for bruise, and that for blood. 830

With many a stiff thwack, many a bang,
 Hard crab-tree and old iron rang,
 While none that saw them could divine
 To which side conquest would incline :
 Until Magnano, who did envy 835

That two should with so many men vie,
 By subtle stratagem of brain
 Perform'd what force could ne'er attain ;
 For he, by foul hap, having found
 Where thistles grew on barren ground, 840
 In haste he drew his weapon out,
 And, having cropt them from the root,
 He clapt them underneath the tail
 Of steed, with pricks as sharp as nail.
 The angry beast did straight resent 845

825 VAR. ' But now fierce Colon 'gan draw on,
 To aid the distress'd champion ;'

828 VAR. ' A fierce dispute.'

844 VAR. ' With prickles sharper than a nail.'

The wrong done to his fundament,
 Began to kick, and fling, and wince,
 As if h' had been beside his sense,
 Striving to disengage from thistle,
 That gall'd him sorely under his tail; 850
 Instead of which, he threw the pack
 Of Squire and baggage from his back,
 And blund'ring still, with smarting rump,
 He gave the Knight's steed such a thump
 As made him reel. The Knight did stoop, 855
 And sat on further side aslope.
 This Talgol viewing, who had now
 By sleight escap'd the fatal blow,
 He rally'd, and again fell to 't;
 For catching foe by nearer foot, 860
 He lifted with such might and strength
 As would have hurl'd him thrice his length,
 And dash'd his brains (if any) out:
 But Mars, that still protects the stout,
 In pudding-time came to his aid, 865

⁸⁴⁶ VAR. ' And feel regret on fundament.'

⁸⁵⁵ VAR. ' That stagger'd him.'

⁸⁶⁴ ⁸⁶⁵ I would here observe the judgment of the Poet: Mars is introduced to the Knight's advantage, as Pallas had been before to his disappointment. It was reasonable that the God of War should come in to his assistance, since a goddess had interested herself on the side of his enemies (agreeably to Homer and Virgil). Had the Knight directly fallen to the ground, he had been probably disabled from future action, and consequently the battle would too soon have been determined. Besides, we may observe a beautiful gradation to the honour of the hero: he falls upon the Bear, the Bear breaks loose, and the spectators run; so that the Knight's fall is the primary cause of this rout, and he might justly, as he afterwards did, ascribe the honour of the victory to himself.

And under him the Bear convey'd,
 The Bear, upon whose soft fur-gown
 The Knight with all his weight fell down.
 The friendly rug preserv'd the ground,
 And head-long Knight, from bruise or wound ; 870
 Like feather-bed betwixt a wall
 And heavy brunt of cannon-ball.
 As Sancho on a blanket fell,
 And had no hurt, ours far'd as well
 In body, though his mighty spirit, 875
 B'ing heavy, did not so well bear it.
 The Bear was in a greater fright,
 Beat down and worsted by the Knight ;
 He roar'd, and rag'd, and flung about,
 To shake off bondage from his snout : 880
 His wrath inflam'd, boil'd o'er, and from
 His jaws of death he threw the foam ;
 Fury in stranger postures threw him,
 And more than ever herald drew him.
 He tore the earth, which he had sav'd 885
 From squelch of Knight, and storm'd and rav'd,
 And vex'd the more because the harms
 He felt were 'gainst the law of arms :
 For men he always took to be
 His friends, and dogs the enemy ; 890
 Who never so much hurt had done him,
 As his own side did falling on him.
 It griev'd him to the guts that they,
 For whom he 'ad fought so many a fray,
 And serv'd with loss of blood so long, 895
 Should offer such inhuman wrong ;
 Wrong of unsoldier-like condition,
 For which he flung down his commission,
 And laid about him, till his nose

From thrall of ring and cord broke loose. 900
 Soon as he felt himself enlarg'd,
 Through thickest of his foes he charg'd,
 And made way through th' amazed crew;
 Some he o'erran, and some o'erthrew,
 But took none; for by hasty flight 905
 He strove t' escape pursuit of Knight,
 From whom he fled with as much haste
 And dread as he the rabble chas'd:
 In haste he fled, and so did they,
 Each and his fear a sev'ral way. 910

Crowdero only kept the field,
 Not stirring from the place he held,
 Though beaten down, and wounded sore
 I' th' Fiddle, and a leg that bore
 One side of him; not that of bone, 915
 But much its better, th' wooden one.
 He spying Hudibras lie strow'd
 Upon the ground, like log of wood,
 With fright of fall, supposed wound,
 And loss of urine, in a swoond, 920
 In haste he snatch'd the wooden limb
 That hurt i' th' ankle lay by him,
 And, fitting it for sudden fight,
 Straight drew it up, t' attack the Knight;
 For getting up on stump and huckle, 925
 He with the foe began to buckle,
 Vowing to be reveng'd, for breach
 Of Crowd and skin, upon the wretch
 Sole author of all detriment

906 VAR. 'avoid the conqu'ring Knight.'

920 VAR. 'cast in swoond.'

923 VAR. 'And listing it.'

924 VAR. 'to fall on Knight.'

He and his fiddle underwent. 930
 But Ralpho (who had now begun
 T' adventure resurrection
 From heavy squelch, and had got up
 Upon his legs, with sprained crup),
 Looking about, beheld pernicion 935
 Approaching Knight from fell musician :
 He snatch'd his whinyard up, that fled
 When he was falling off his steed
 (As rats do from a falling house)
 To hide itself from rage of blows, 940
 And, wing'd with speed and fury, flew
 To rescue Knight from black and blue ;
 Which ere he could achieve, his sconce
 The leg encounter'd twice and once.
 And now 'twas rais'd to smite agen 945
 When Ralpho thrust himself between ;
 He took the blow upon his arm,
 To shield the Knight from further harm,
 And, joining wrath with force, bestow'd
 On th' wooden member such a load, 950
 That down it fell, and with it bore
 Crowdero, whom it propp'd before.
 To him the Squire right nimbly run,
 And setting conqu'ring foot upon
 His trunk, thus spoke : What desp'rate frenzy 955
 Made thee (thou whelp of Sin) to fancy
 Thyself and all that coward rabble
 T' encounter us in battle able ?

935 936 VAR. ' Looking about, beheld the Bard
 To charge the Knight entranc'd prepar'd.'

944 VAR. ' The skin encounter'd,' &c.

947 VAR. ' on side and arm.'

948 VAR. ' To shield the Knight entranc'd from harm.'

How durst th', I say, oppose thy Curship
'Gainst arms, authority, and worship, 960
And Hudibras or me provoke,
Though all thy limbs were heart of oak,
And th' other half of thee as good
To bear out blows as that of wood?
Could not the whipping-post prevail, 965
With all its rhet'rick, nor the jail,
To keep from flaying scourge thy skin,
And ankle free from iron gin?
Which now thou shalt—but first our care
Must see how Hudibras does fare. 970
This said, he gently rais'd the Knight,
And set him on his bum upright.
To rouse him from lethargic dump,
He tweak'd his nose, with gentle thump
Knock'd on his breast, as if't had been 975
To raise the spirits lodg'd within:
They, waken'd with the noise, did fly
From inward room to window eye,
And gently op'ning lid, the casement,
Look'd out, but yet with some amazement. 980
This gladded Ralpho much to see,
Who thus bespoke the Knight. Quoth he,
Tweaking his nose, You are, great Sir,
A self-denying conqueror;
As high, victorious, and great, 985
As e'er fought for the Churches yet,
If you will give yourself but leave
To make out what y' already have;
That's victory. The foe, for dread
Of your nine-worthiness, is fled, 990
All save Crowdero, for whose sake
You did th' espous'd Cause undertake;

And he lies pris'ner at your feet,
 To be dispos'd as you think meet,
 Either for life, or death, or sale, 995
 The gallows, or perpetual jail :
 For one wink of your pow'rful eye
 Must sentence him to live or die.
 His Fiddle is your proper purchase,
 Won in the service of the Churches ; 1000
 And by your doom must be allow'd
 To be, or be no more, a Crowd :
 For though success did not confer
 Just title on the conqueror ;
 Though dispensations were not strong 1005
 Conclusions whether right or wrong ;
 Although Outgoings did confirm,
 And Owning were but a mere term ;
 Yet as the wicked have no right
 To th' creature, though usurp'd by might, 1010
 The property is in the Saint,
 From whom th' injuriously detain 't :
 Of him they hold their luxuries,
 Their dogs, their horses, whores, and dice,
 Their riots, revels, masks, delights, 1015
 Pimps, buffoons, fiddlers, parasites ;
 All which the Saints have title to,
 And ought t' enjoy, if th' had their due.
 What we take from 'em is no more
 Than what was ours by right before : 1020

¹⁰⁰⁹ It was a principle maintained by the Rebels of those days, that dominion is founded on grace ; and therefore if a man wanted grace (in their opinion), if he was not a saint or a godly man, he had no right to any lands, goods, or chattels. The Saints, as the Squire says, had a right to all, and might take it, wherever they had a power to do it.

For we are their true landlords still,
And they our tenants but at will.
At this the Knight began to rouse,
And by degrees grow valorous :
He star'd about, and seeing none 1025
Of all his foes remain but one,
He snatch'd his weapon that lay near him,
And from the ground began to rear him,
Vowing to make Crowdero pay
For all the rest that ran away. 1030
But Ralpho now, in colder blood,
His fury mildly thus withstood :
Great Sir, quoth he, your mighty spirit
Is rais'd too high ; this slave does merit
To be the hangman's bus'ness sooner 1035
Than from your hand to have the honour
Of his destruction ; I that am
A Nothingness in deed and name,
Did scorn to hurt his forfeit carcase,
Or ill entreat his Fiddle or case : 1040
Will you, great Sir, that glory blot
In cold blood, which you gain'd in hot ?
Will you employ your conqu'ring sword
To break a fiddle, and your word ?
For though I fought and overcame, 1045
And quarter gave, 'twas in your name :
For great commanders always own
What's prosp'rous by the soldier done.
To save, where you have pow'r to kill,
Argues your pow'r above your will ; 1050
And that your will and pow'r have less
Than both might have of selfishness.
This pow'r, which now alive, with dread
He trembles at, if he were dead

Would no more keep the slave in awe, 1055
 Than if you were a Knight of straw ;
 For Death would then be his conqueror,
 Not you, and free him from that terror.
 If danger from his life accrue,
 Or honour from his death, to you, 1060
 'Twere policy and honour too
 To do as you resolv'd to do :
 But, Sir, 'twould wrong your valour much,
 To say it needs, or fears a crutch.
 Great conqu'rors greater glory gain 1065
 By foes in triumph led, than slain :
 The laurels that adorn their brows
 Are pull'd from living, not dead boughs,
 And living foes : the greatest fame
 Of cripple slain can be but lame : 1070
 One half of him 's already slain,
 The other is not worth your pain ;
 Th' honour can but on one side light,
 As worship did, when y' were dubb'd Knight ;
 Wherefore I think it better far 1075
 To keep him prisoner of war,
 And let him fast in bonds abide,
 At court of justice to be try'd ;
 Where if h' appear so bold or crafty
 There may be danger in his safety, 1080
 If any member there dislike
 His face, or to his beard have pique,
 Or if his death will save or yield,
 Revenge or fright, it is reveal'd ;

1084 When the Rebels had taken a prisoner, though they gave him quarter, and promised to save his life, yet if any of them afterwards thought it not proper that he should be saved, it was only saying it was revealed to him that such

Though he has quarter, ne'ertheless 1085
 Y' have pow'r to hang him when you please.
 This has been often done by some
 Of our great conqu'rors, you know whom ;
 And has by most of us been held
 Wise justice, and to some reveal'd : 1090
 For words and promises, that yoke
 The conqueror, are quickly broke ;
 Like Samson's cuffs, though by his own
 Direction and advice put on.
 For if we should fight for the Cause 1095
 By rules of military laws,
 And only do what they call just,
 The Cause would quickly fall to dust.
 This we among ourselves may speak ;
 But to the wicked or the weak 1100
 We must be cautious to declare
 Perfection-truths, such as these are.

This said, the high outrageous mettle
 Of Knight began to cool and settle.
 He lik'd the Squire's advice, and soon 1105
 Resolv'd to see the bus'ness done ;
 And therefore charg'd him first to bind
 Crowdero's hands on rump behind,
 And to its former place and use
 The wooden member to reduce ; 1110
 But force it take an oath before,
 Ne'er to bear arms against him more.

Ralpho dispatch'd with speedy haste,

a one should die, and they hanged him up, notwithstanding
 the promises before made. Dr. South observes of Harrison
 the Regicide, a butcher by profession, and preaching Co-
 lonel in the Parliament army, " That he was notable for
 having killed several after quarter given by others, using
 these words in doing it : ' Cursed be he who doth the work
 of the Lord negligently.' "

And, having ty'd Crowdero fast,
 He gave Sir Knight the end of cord, 1115
 To lead the captive of his sword
 In triumph, whilst the steeds he caught,
 And them to further service brought.
 The Squire in state rode on before,
 And on his nut-brown whinyard bore 1120
 The trophee Fiddle and the case,
 Leaning on shoulder like a mace.
 The Knight himself did after ride,
 Leading Crowdero by his side ;
 And tow'd him if he lagg'd behind, 1125
 Like boat against the tide and wind.
 Thus grave and solemn they march on,
 Until quite through the town they 'ad gone,
 At further end of which there stands
 An ancient castle, that commands 1130
 Th' adjacent parts ; in all the fabric
 You shall not see one stone nor a brick,
 But all of wood, by pow'rful spell
 Of magic made impregnable :
 There's neither iron-bar nor gate, 1135
 Portcullis, chain, nor bolt, nor grate,
 And yet men durance there abide,
 In dungeon scarce three inches wide :
 With roof so low, that under it
 They never stand, but lie or sit ; 1140
 And yet so foul, that whoso is in
 Is to the middle-leg in prison ;
 In circle magical confin'd

1122 VAR. ' Plac'd on his shoulder.'

1130 This is an enigmatical description of a pair of stocks and whipping-post ; it is so pompous and sublime, that we are surprised so noble a structure could be raised from so ludicrous a subject.

With walls of subtle air and wind,
 Which none are able to break thorough 1145
 Until they're freed by head of borough.
 Thither arriv'd, th' advent'rous Knight
 And bold Squire from their steeds alight
 At th' outward wall, near which there stands
 A Bastile, built t' imprison hands ; 1150
 By strange enchantment made to fetter
 The lesser parts, and free the greater.
 For though the body may creep through,
 The hands in grate are fast enough ;
 And when a circle 'bout the wrist 1155
 Is made by beadle exorcist,
 The body feels the spur and switch,
 As if 'twere ridden post by witch
 At twenty miles an hour pace,
 And yet ne'er stirs out of the place. 1160
 On top of this there is a spire,
 On which Sir Knight first bids the Squire
 The Fiddle, and its spoils, the case,
 In manner of a trophee place ;
 That done, they ope the trap-door gate, 1165
 And let Crowdero down thereat.
 Crowdero making doleful face,
 Like hermit poor in pensive place,
 To dungeon they the wretch commit,
 And the survivor of his feet ; 1170
 But th' other that had broke the peace,
 And head of Knighthood, they release,
 Though a delinquent false and forged,
 Yet b'ing a stranger he's enlarged,
 While his comrade, that did no hurt, 1175
 Is clapp'd up fast in prison for't :
 So justice, while she winks at crimes,
 Stumbles on innocence sometimes.

PART I. CANTO III.

THE ARGUMENT.

The scatter'd rout return and rally,
 Surround the place: the Knight does sally,
 And is made pris'ner: then they seize
 Th' enchanted fort by storm, release
 Crowdero, and put the Squire in 's place;
 I should have first said Hudibras.

AY me! what perils do environ
 The man that meddles with cold iron!
 What plaguy mischiefs and mishaps
 Do dog him still with after-claps!
 For though Dame Fortune seem to smile, 5
 And leer upon him for a while,
 She'll after shew him, in the nick
 Of all his glories, a dog-trick.
 This any man may sing or say
 I' th' ditty call'd, What if a Day? 10
 For Hudibras, who thought he 'ad won
 The field, as certain as a gun,
 And having routed the whole troop,
 With victory was cock-a-hoop,
 Thinking he 'ad done enough to purchase 15
 Thanksgiving-day among the Churches,
 Wherein his mettle and brave worth
 Might be explain'd by holder-forth
 And register'd by fame eternal
 In deathless pages of Diurnal, 20
 Found in few minutes, to his cost,

He did but count without his host,
 And that a turnstile is more certain
 Than, in events of war, Dame Fortune.

For now the late faint-hearted rout, 25
 O'erthrown and scatter'd round about,
 Chas'd by the horror of their fear
 From bloody fray of Knight and Bear
 (All but the Dogs, who in pursuit
 Of the Knight's victory stood to 't, 30
 And most ignobly fought to get
 The honour of his blood and sweat),
 Seeing the coast was free and clear
 O' the conquer'd and the conqueror,
 Took heart again, and fac'd about 35
 As if they meant to stand it out :
 For by this time the routed Bear,
 Attack'd by th' enemy i' th' rear,
 Finding their number grew too great
 For him to make a safe retreat, 40
 Like a bold chieftain fac'd about ;
 But wisely doubting to hold out,
 Gave way to fortune, and with haste
 Fac'd the proud foe, and fled, and fac'd,
 Retiring still, until he found 45
 He 'ad got the advantage of the ground,
 And then as val'antly made head
 To check the foe, and forthwith fled,
 Leaving no art untry'd, nor trick
 Of warrior stout and politic, 50
 Until, in spite of hot pursuit,
 He gain'd a pass, to hold dispute
 On better terms, and stop the course

³⁵ VAR. 'Took heart of grace.'

³⁷ VAR. 'FOR now the half-defeated Bear.'

Of the proud foe. With all his force
He bravely charg'd, and for awhile 55
Forc'd their whole body to recoil ;
But still their numbers so increas'd,
He found himself at length oppress'd,
And all evasions so uncertain,
To save himself for better fortune, 60
That he resolv'd, rather than yield,
To die with honour in the field,
And sell his hide and carcase at
A price as high and desperate
As e'er he could. This resolution 65
He forthwith put in execution,
And bravely threw himself among
The enemy, i' th' greatest throng :
But what could single valour do
Against so numerous a foe ? 70
Yet much he did, indeed too much
To be believ'd, where th' odds were such ;
But one against a multitude,
Is more than mortal can make good :
For while one party he oppos'd, 75
His rear was suddenly inclos'd,
And no room left him for retreat
Or fight against a foe so great.
For now the Mastives, charging home,
To blows and handy-gripes were come ; 80
While manfully himself he bore,
And setting his right foot before,
He rais'd himself, to shew how tall
His person was above them all.
This equal shame and envy stirr'd 85
In th' enemy, that one should beard
So many warriors, and so stout,

As he had done, and stav'd it out,
 Disdaining to lay down his arms,
 And yield on honourable terms. 90

Enraged thus, some in the rear
 Attack'd him, and some ev'ry where,
 Till down he fell; yet falling fought,
 And, being down, still laid about:
 As Widdrington, in doleful dumps, 95
 Is said to fight upon his stumps.

But all, alas! had been in vain,
 And he inevitably slain,
 If Trulla' and Cerdon in the nick
 To rescue him had not been quick: 100
 For Trulla, who was light of foot
 As shafts which long-field Parthians shoot
 (But not so light as to be borne
 Upon the ears of standing corn,
 Or trip it o'er the water quicker 105
 Than witches when their staves they liquor,
 As some report), was got among
 The foremost of the martial throng.
 There pitying the vanquish'd Bear,
 She call'd to Cerdon, who stood near, 110
 Viewing the bloody fight; to whom,

¹⁰² 'As shafts which long-field Parthians shoot.' Mr. Warburton is of opinion that 'long-filed' would be more proper; as the Parthians were ranged in long files, a disposition proper for their manner of fighting, which was by sudden retreats and sudden charges. Mr. Smith of Harleston, in Norfolk, thinks that the following alteration of the line would be an improvement:

'As long-field shafts, which Parthians shoot.'

'Long-field Parthians' is right, i. e. Parthians who shoot from a distance. ED.

Shall we (quoth she) stand still hum-drum,
 And see stout Bruin, all alone,
 By numbers basely overthrown?
 Such feats already he 'as achiev'd 115
 In story not to be believ'd,
 And 'twould to us be shame enough
 Not to attempt to fetch him off.
 I would (quoth he) venture a limb
 To second thee, and rescue him; 120
 But then we must about it straight,
 Or else our aid will come too late:
 Quarter he scorns, he is so stout,
 And therefore cannot long hold out.
 This said, they wav'd their weapons round 125
 About their heads to clear the ground,
 And joining forces, laid about
 So fiercely, that th' amazed rout
 Turn'd tail again, and straight begun,
 As if the devil drove, to run. 130
 Mean-while th' approach'd the place where Bruin
 Was now engag'd to mortal ruin:
 The conqu'ring foe they soon assail'd,
 First Trulla stav'd, and Cerdon tail'd,
 Until their Mastives loos'd their hold; 135
 And yet, alas! do what they could,
 The worsted Bear came off with store
 Of bloody wounds, but all before.
 For as Achilles, dipt in pond,
 Was anabaptiz'd free from wound, 140
 Made proof against dead-doing steel
 All over, but the Pagan heel;
 So did our champion's arms defend
 All of him but the other end,
 His head and ears, which in the martial 145

Encounter lost a leathern parcel.
 For as an Austrian archduke once
 Had one ear (which in ducatoons
 Is half the coin) in battle par'd
 Close to his head, so Bruin far'd ; 150
 But tugg'd and pull'd on th' other side
 Like scriv'ner newly crucify'd,
 Or like the late corrected leathern
 Ears of the circumcised brethren.
 But gentle Trulla into th' ring 155
 He wore in 's nose convey'd a string,
 With which she march'd before, and led
 The warrior to a grassy bed,
 As authors write, in a cool shade
 Which eglantine and roses made, 160
 Close by a softly murm'ring stream,
 Where lovers us'd to loll and dream :
 There leaving him to his repose,
 Secured from pursuit of foes,
 And wanting nothing but a song 165
 And a well-tun'd theorbo hung
 Upon a bough, to ease the pain
 His tugg'd ears suffer'd, with a strain,
 They both drew up, to march in quest
 Of his great leader and the rest. 170

For Orsin (who was more renown'd
 For stout maintaining of his ground,
 In standing fight, than for pursuit,
 As being not so quick of foot)
 Was not long able to keep pace 175
 With others that pursu'd the chace,
 But found himself left far behind,
 Both out of heart and out of wind.
 Griev'd to behold his Bear pursued

So basely by a multitude, 180
 And like to fall, not by the prowess,
 But numbers, of his coward foes,
 He rag'd, and kept as heavy a coil as
 Stout Hercules for loss of Hylas,
 Forcing the valleys to repeat 185
 The accents of his sad regret :
 He beat his breast and tore his hair,
 For loss of his dear crony Bear,
 That Echo, from the hollow ground,
 His doleful wailings did resound 190
 More wistfully, by many times,
 That in small poets' splayfoot rhymes,
 That make her, in their ruthless stories,
 To answer to int'rrogatories,
 And most unconscionably depose 195
 To things of which she nothing knows ;
 And when she has said all she can say,
 'Tis wrested to the lover's fancy.
 Quoth he, O whither, wicked Bruin !
 Art thou fled to my— : Echo, Ruin. 200
 I thought th' hadst scorn'd to budge a step
 For fear : quoth Echo, Marry guep.
 Am not I here to take thy part ?
 Then what has quail'd thy stubborn heart ?
 Have these bones rattled, and this head 205
 So often in thy quarrel bled ?
 Nor did I ever winch or grudge it
 For thy dear sake : Quoth she, Mum budget.

¹⁸⁹ ¹⁹⁰ This passage is beautiful, not only as it is a moving lamentation, and evidences our Poet to be master of the pathetic as well as the sublime style, but also as it comprehends a fine satire upon that false kind of wit of making an echo talk sensibly, and give rational answers.

Think'st thou 'twill not be laid i' th' dish
 Thou turn'dst thy back? Quoth Echo, Pish. 210

To run from those th' hadst overcome

Thus cowardly? Quoth Echo, Mum.

But what a vengeance makes thee fly

From me too, as thine enemy?

Or, if thou hast no thought of me, 215

Nor what I have endured for thee,

Yet shame and honour might prevail

To keep thee thus from turning tail:

For who would grutch to spend his blood in

His honour's cause? Quoth she, A puddin. 220

This said, his grief to anger turn'd,

Which in his manly stomach burn'd;

Thirst of revenge, and wrath, in place

Of sorrow, now began to blaze:

He vow'd the authors of his woe 225

Should equal vengeance undergo,

And with their bones and flesh pay dear

For what he suffer'd, and his Bear.

This being resolv'd, with equal speed

And rage he hasted to proceed 230

To action straight, and, giving o'er

To search for Bruin any more,

He went in quest of Hudibras,

To find him out where'er he was;

And, if he were above ground, vow'd 235

He'd ferret him, lurk where he would.

But scarce had he a furlong on

This resolute adventure gone,

When he encounter'd with that crew

Whom Hudibras did late subdue. 240

Honour, revenge, contempt, and shame,

Did equally their breasts inflame.

'Mong these the fierce Magnano was,
 And Talgol, foe to Hudibras,
 Cerdon and Colon, warriors stout 245
 And resolute, as ever fought ;
 Whom furious Orsin thus bespoke :
 Shall we (quoth he) thus basely brook
 The vile affront that paltry ass,
 And feeble scoundrel, Hudibras, 250
 With that more paltry ragamuffin,
 Ralpho, with vapouring and huffing,
 Have put upon us, like tame cattle,
 As if th' had routed us in battle ?
 For my part, it shall ne'er be sed 255
 I for the washing gave my head :
 Nor did I turn my back for fear
 O' th' rascals, but loss of my Bear,
 Which now I'm like to undergo ;
 For whether these fell wounds, or no, 260
 He has receiv'd in fight, are mortal,
 Is more than all my skill can foretell ;
 Nor do I know what is become
 Of him, more than the Pope of Rome.
 But if I can but find them out 265
 That caus'd it (as I shall, no doubt,
 Where'er th' in hugger-mugger lurk)
 I'll make them rue their handiwork,
 And wish that they had rather dar'd
 To pull the devil by the beard. 270

Quoth Cerdon, Noble Orsin, th' hast
 Great reason to do as thou say'st,
 And so has ev'ry body here,
 As well as thou hast, or thy Bear :

258 VAR. ' Of them, but losing of my Bear.'

Others may do as they see good ; 275
 But if this twig be made of wood
 That will hold tack, I'll make the fur
 Fly 'bout the ears of that old cur,
 And th' other mungrel vermin, Ralph,
 That brav'd us all in his behalf. 280
 Thy Bear is safe and out of peril,
 Though lugg'd indeed and wounded very ill ;
 Myself and Trulla made a shift
 To help him out at a dead lift,
 And having brought him bravely off, 285
 Have left him where he's safe enough :
 There let him rest ; for if we stay,
 The slaves may hap to get away.

This said, they all engag'd to join
 Their forces in the same design, 290
 And forthwith put themselves in search
 Of Hudibras upon their march :
 Where leave we them a while, to tell
 What the victorious Knight befell ;
 For such, Crowdero being fast 295
 In dungeon shut, we left him last.
 Triumphant laurels seem'd to grow
 No-where so green as on his brow,
 Laden with which, as well as tir'd
 With conqu'ring toil, he now retir'd 300
 Unto a neighb'ring castle by,
 To rest his body, and apply
 Fit med'cines to each glorious bruise
 He got in fight, reds, blacks, and blues ;
 To mollify th' uneasy pang 305
 Of ev'ry honourable bang ;
 Which b'ing by skilful midwife drest,
 He laid him down to take his rest.

But all in vain : h' had got a hurt,
 O th' inside, of a deadlier sort, 310
 By Cupid made, who took his stand
 Upon a widow's jointure-land
 (For he, in all his am'rous battles,
 No 'dvantage finds like goods and chattels),
 Drew home his bow, and, aiming right, 315
 Let fly an arrow at the Knight.
 The shaft against a rib did glance,
 And gall him in the purtenance ;
 But time had somewhat 'swag'd his pain,
 After he found his suit in vain ; 320
 For that proud dame, for whom his soul
 Was burnt in 's belly like a coal,
 (That belly that so oft did ake
 And suffer griping for her sake,
 Till purging comfits and ants' eggs 325
 Had almost brought him off his legs),
 Us'd him so like a base rascallion
 That old Pyg—(what d' ye call him)—malion,
 That cut his mistress out of stone,
 Had not so hard a hearted one. 330
 She had a thousand jadish tricks,
 Worse than a mule that flings and kicks ;
 'Mong which one cross-grain'd freak she had,
 As insolent as strange and mad :
 She could love none but only such 335
 As scorn'd and hated her as much.
 'Twas a strange riddle of a lady ;
 Not love, if any lov'd her : hey-day !
 So cowards never use their might

^{315 316} VAR. ' As how he did, and aiming right,
 An arrow he let fly at Knight.'

³³⁸ VAR. ' Ha-day !'

But against such as will not fight ; 340
So some diseases have been found
Only to seize upon the sound.
He that gets her by heart must say her
The back way, like a witch's prayer.
Meanwhile the Knight had no small task 345
To compass what he durst not ask :
He loves, but dares not make the motion ;
Her ignorance is his devotion :
Like caitiff vile, that for misdeed
Rides with his face to rump of steed, 350
Or rowing scull, he's fain to love ;
Look one way, and another move :
Or like a tumbler that does play
His game, and look another way
Until he seize upon the coney ; 355
Just so does he by matrimony.
But all in vain ; her subtle snout
Did quickly wind his meaning out,
Which she return'd with too much scorn
To be by man of honour borne : 360
Yet much he bore, until the distress
He suffer'd from his spiteful mistress
Did stir his stomach, and the pain
He had endur'd from her disdain
Turn'd to regret so resolute 365
That he resolv'd to wave his suit,
And either to renounce her quite
Or for a while play least in sight.
This resolution b'ing put on,
He kept some months, and more had done, 370
But being brought so nigh by Fate,
The vict'ry he achiev'd so late
Did set his thoughts agog, and ope

A door to discontinu'd hope,
 That seem'd to promise he might win 375
 His dame too, now his hand was in ;
 And that his valour, and the honour
 H' had newly gain'd, might work upon her.
 These reasons made his mouth to water
 With am'rous longings to be at her : 380
 Quoth he, unto himself, Who knows
 But this brave conquest o'er my foes
 May reach her heart, and make that stoop,
 As I but now have forc'd the troop ?
 If nothing can oppugn love, 385
 And virtue invious ways can prove,
 What may not he confide to do
 That brings both love and virtue too ?
 But thou bring'st valour too, and wit,
 Two things that seldom fail to hit. 390
 Valour's a mouse-trap, wit a gin,
 Which women oft are taken in :
 Then, Hudibras, why should'st thou fear
 To be, that art, a conqueror ?
 Fortune th' audacious doth *juvare*, 395
 But lets the timidous miscarry :
 Then, while the honour thou hast got
 Is spick and span new, piping-hot,
 Strike her up bravely thou hadst best,
 And trust thy fortune with the rest. 400
 Such thoughts as these the Knight did keep,
 More than his bangs, or fleas, from sleep :
 And as an owl, that in a barn
 Sees a mouse creeping in the corn,
 Sits still, and shuts his round blue eyes 405
 As if he slept, until he spies
 The little beast within his reach,

Then starts, and seizes on the wretch ;
 So from his couch the Knight did start,
 To seize upon the widow's heart, 410
 Crying, with hasty tone and hoarse,
 Ralpho, dispatch, to horse, to horse.
 And 'twas but time ; for now the rout,
 We left engag'd to seek him out,
 By speedy marches were advanc'd 415
 Up to the fort were he ensconc'd,
 And all th' avenues had possest
 About the place, from east to west.

That done, a while they made a halt
 To view the ground, and where t' assault : 420
 Then call'd a council, which was best,
 By siege or onslaught, to invest
 The enemy ; and 'twas agreed
 By storm and onslaught to proceed.
 This b'ing resolv'd, in comely sort 425
 They now drew up t' attack the fort ;
 When Hudibras, about to enter
 Upon another-gates adventure,
 To Ralpho call'd aloud to arm,
 Not dreaming of approaching storm. 430
 Whether Dame Fortune, or the care
 Of angel bad, or tutelar,
 Did arm, or thrust him on a danger
 To which he was an utter stranger,
 That foresight might, or might not, blot 435
 The glory he had newly got,
 Or to his shame it might be sed,
 They took him napping in his bed ;
 To them we leave it to expound

That deal in sciences profound.

440

His courser scarce he had bestrid,
 And Ralpho that on which he rid,
 When, setting ope the postern gate,
 Which they thought best to sally at,
 The foe appear'd drawn up and drill'd,
 Ready to charge them in the field.

445

This somewhat startled the bold Knight,
 Surpris'd with th' unexpected sight :

The bruises of his bones and flesh
 He thought began to smart afresh ;

450

Till, recollecting wonted courage,
 His fear was soon converted to rage ;
 And thus he spoke : The coward foe,

Whom we but now gave quarter to,
 Look, yonder's rally'd, and appears
 As if they had outrun their fears.

455

The glory we did lately get,
 The Fates command us to repeat ;
 And to their wills we must succumb,
Quocunque trahunt, 'tis our doom.

460

This is the same numeric crew
 Which we so lately did subdue ;

The self-same individuals that
 Did run, as mice do from a cat,
 When we courageously did wield

465

Our martial weapons in the field,
 To tug for victory : and when

We shall our shining blades agen
 Brandish in terror o'er our heads,

They'll straight resume their wonted dreads.
 Fear is an ague, that forsakes

470

⁴⁴⁴ VAR. 'To take the field, and sally at.'

And haunts, by fits, those whom it takes ;
 And they'll opine they feel the pain
 And blows they felt, to-day again.
 Then let us boldly charge them home, 475
 And make no doubt to overcome.

This said, his courage to inflame,
 He call'd upon his mistress' name ;
 His pistol next he cock'd anew,
 And out his nut-brown whinyard drew, 480
 And, placing Ralpho in the front,
 Reserv'd himself to bear the brunt,
 As expert warriors use : then ply'd
 With iron heel his courser's side,
 Conveying sympathetic speed 485
 From heel of Knight to heel of steed.

Mean-while the foe, with equal rage
 And speed, advancing to engage,
 Both parties now were drawn so close,
 Almost to come to handy-blows : 490
 When Orsin first let fly a stone
 At Ralpho ; not so huge a one
 As that which Diomed did maul
 Æneas on the bum withal,
 Yet big enough, if rightly hurl'd, 495
 T' have sent him to another world,
 Whether above ground or below,
 Which saints twice dipt are destin'd to.
 The danger startled the bold Squire,
 And made him some few steps retire ; 500
 But Hudibras advanc'd to 's aid,
 And rous'd his spirits half-dismay'd.
 He, wisely doubting lest the shot

472 VAR. ' Haunts by turns.'

Of th' enemy, now growing hot,
 Might at a distance gall, press'd close . 505
 To come pell-mell to handy-blows,
 And that he might their aim decline
 Advanc'd still in an oblique line ;
 But prudently forbore to fire,
 Till breast to breast he had got nigher, 510
 As expert warriors use to do
 When hand to hand they charge their foe.
 This order the advent'rous Knight,
 Most soldier-like, observ'd in fight ;
 When Fortune (as she's wont) turn'd fickle, 515
 And for the foe began to stickle :
 The more shame for her Goodyship,
 To give so near a friend the slip.
 For Colon, choosing out a stone, ^
 Levell'd so right, it thump'd upon 520
 His manly paunch with such a force
 As almost beat him off his horse.
 He loos'd his whinyard and the rein,
 But, laying fast hold on the mane,
 Preserv'd his seat : and as a goose 525
 In death contracts his talons close,
 So did the Knight, and with one claw
 The tricker of his pistol draw.
 The gun went off ; and as it was
 Still fatal to stout Hudibras, 530
 In all his feats of arms, when least
 He dreamt of it, to prosper best,
 So now he far'd ; the shot, let fly
 At random 'mong the enemy,

523 VAR. ' He loos'd his weapon'—and, ' He lost his whinyard.'

Pierc'd Talgol's gabardine, and grazing 535
 Upon his shoulder, in the passing
 Lodg'd in Magnano's brass habergeon,
 Who straight A surgeon, cry'd, A surgeon :
 He tumbled down, and, as he fell,
 Did Murder, Murder, Murder, yell. 540
 This startled their whole body so,
 That if the Knight had not let go
 His arms, but been in warlike plight,
 He'd won (the second time) the fight ;
 As, if the Squire had but fall'n on, 545
 He had inevitably done.
 But he, diverted with the care
 Of Hudibras his hurt, forbare
 To press th' advantage of his fortune,
 While danger did the rest dishearten. 550
 For he with Cerdon b'ing engag'd
 In close encounter, they both wag'd
 The fight so well 'twas hard to say
 Which side was like to get the day.
 And now the busy work of Death 555
 Had tir'd them so, th' agreed to breathe,
 Preparing to renew the fight,
 When the disaster of the Knight,
 And th' other party, did divert
 Their fell intent, and forc'd them part. 560
 Ralpho press'd up to Hudibras,
 And Cerdon where Magnano was,

545—548 VAR. ' As Ralpho might, but he with care
 Of Hudibras his hurt forbare.'

548 VAR. ' Hudibras his wound.'

551 VAR. ' He had with Cerdon.'

553 VAR. ' So desperately.'

560 VAR. ' And force their sullen rage to part.'

Each striving to confirm his party
With stout encouragements and hearty.

Quoth Ralpho, Courage, valiant Sir, 565
And let revenge and honour stir
Your spirits up; once more fall on,
The shatter'd foe begins to run:
For if but half so well you knew
To use your vict'ry as subdue, 570
They durst not, after such a blow
As you have given them, face us now,
But from so formidable a soldier
Had fled like crows when they smell powder.
Thrice have they seen your sword aloft 575
Wav'd o'er their heads, and fled as oft;
But if you let them recollect
Their spirits, now dismay'd and checkt,
You'll have a harder game to play
Than yet y' have had, to get the day. 580

Thus spoke the stout Squire, but was heard
By Hudibras with small regard;
His thoughts were fuller of the bang
He lately took, than Ralph's harangue:
To which he answer'd, Cruel Fate . 585
'Tells me thy counsel comes too late.
The knotted blood within my hose,
That from my wounded body flows,
With mortal crisis doth portend
My days to appropinque an end. 590
I am for action now unfit
Either of fortitude or wit,
Fortune, my foe, begins to frown,
Resolv'd to pull my stomach down.

I am not apt upon a wound, 595
 Or trivial basting, to despond,
 Yet I'd be loth my days to curtal;
 For if I thought my wounds not mortal,
 Or that w' had time enough as yet
 To make an honourable retreat, 600
 'Twere the best course: but if they find
 We fly, and leave our arms behind,
 For them to seize on, the dishonour
 And danger too is such, I'll sooner
 Stand to it boldly and take quarter, 605
 To let them see I am no starter.
 In all the trade of war no feat
 Is nobler than a brave retreat:
 For those that run away and fly
 Take place at least o' th' enemy. 610

This said, the Squire, with active speed,
 Dismounted from his bony steed,
 To seize the arms which, by mischance,
 Fell from the bold Knight in a trance:
 These being found out, and restor'd 615
 To Hudibras, their nat'ral lord,
 As a man may say, with might and main
 He hasted to get up again.
 Thrice he essay'd to mount aloft,
 But by his weighty bum as oft 620
 He was pull'd back, till, having found
 Th' advantage of the rising ground,
 Thither he led his warlike steed,
 And, having plac'd him right, with speed
 Prepar'd again to scale the beast; 625
 When Orsin, who had newly drest

617 VAR. 'The active Squire, with might and main,
 Prepar'd in haste to mount again.'

The bloody scar upon the shoulder
Of Talgol with Promethean powder,
And now was searching for the shot
That laid Magnano on the spot, 630
Beheld the sturdy Squire aforesaid,
Preparing to climb up his horse-side :
He left his cure, and, laying hold
Upon his arms, with courage bold
Cry'd out, 'Tis now no time to dally, 635
The enemy begin to rally ;
Let us that are unhurt and whole
Fall on, and happy man be 's dole.
This said, like to a thunderbolt
He flew with fury to th' assault, 640
Striving th' enemy to attack
Before he reach'd his horse's back.
Ralpho was mounted now, and gotten
O'erthwart his beast with active vau'ting,
Wriggling his body to recover 645
His seat, and cast his right leg over :
When Orsin, rushing in, bestow'd
On horse and man so heavy a load,
The beast was startled, and begun
To kick and fling like mad, and run, 650
Bearing the tough Squire like a sack,
Or stout King Richard, on his back ;
Till stumbling, he threw him down,
Sore bruis'd, and cast into a swoon.
Meanwhile the Knight began to rouse 655
The sparkles of his wonted prowess :
He thrust his hand into his hose,
And found, both by his eyes and nose,
'Twas only choler, and not blood,
That from his wounded body flow'd. 660

This, with the hazard of the Squire,
Inflam'd him with despiteful ire :
Courageously he fac'd about,
And drew his other pistol out,
And now had half-way bent the cock ; 665
When Cerdon gave so fierce a shock
With sturdy truncheon, thwart his arm,
That down it fell and did no harm ;
Then, stoutly pressing on with speed,
Assay'd to pull him off his steed. 670
The Knight his sword had only left,
With which he Cerdon's head had cleft,
Or at the least cropp'd off a limb,
But Orsin came, and rescu'd him.
He with his lance attack'd the Knight 675
Upon his quarters opposite :
But as a barque, that in foul weather,
Toss'd by two adverse winds together,
Is bruis'd and beaten to and fro,
And knows not which to turn him to ; 680
So far'd the Knight between two foes,
And knew not which of them t' oppose :
Till Orsin, charging with his lance
At Hudibras, by spiteful chance
Hit Cerdon such a bang, as stunn'd 685
And laid him flat upon the ground.
At this the Knight began to cheer up,
And, raising up himself on stirrup,
Cry'd out, *Victoria*, lie thou there,
And I shall straight dispatch another 690
To bear thee company in death ;
But first I'll halt a while, and breathe :
As well he might ; for Orsin, griev'd
At th' wound that Cerdon had receiv'd,

Ran to relieve him with his lore, 655
 And cure the hurt he gave before.
 Meanwhile the Knight had wheel'd about
 To breathe himself, and next find out
 Th' advantage of the ground, where best
 He might the ruffled foe infest. 700
 This b'ing resolv'd, he spurr'd his steed,
 To run at Orsin with full speed,
 While he was busy in the care
 Of Cerdon's wound, and unaware :
 But he was quick, and had already 705
 Unto the part apply'd remedy ;
 And seeing th' enemy prepar'd,
 Drew up and stood upon his guard.
 Then like a warrior right expert
 And skilful in the martial art, 710
 The subtle Knight straight made a halt,
 And judg'd it best to stay th' assault,
 Until he had reliev'd the Squire,
 And then (in order) to retire,
 Or, as occasion should invite, 715
 With forces join'd renew the fight.
 Ralpho, by this time disentranc'd,
 Upon his bum himself advanc'd,
 Though sorely bruis'd ; his limbs all o'er
 With ruthless bangs were stiff and sore : 720
 Right fain he would have got upon
 His feet again, to get him gone,
 When Hudibras to aid him came :
 Quoth he (and call'd him by his name),
 Courage, the day at length is ours, 725
 And we once more, as conquerors,
 Have both the field and honour won ;
 The foe is profligate and run :

I mean all such as can, for some
 This hand hath sent to their long home ; 730
 And some lie sprawling on the ground,
 With many a gash and bloody wound.

Cæsar himself could never say
 He got two vict'ries in a day
 As I have done, that can say, twice I 735
 In one day *veni, vidi, vici*.

The foe's so numerous, that we
 Cannot so often *vincere*,
 And they *perire*, and yet enow
 Be left to strike an after-blow : 740

Then lest they rally, and once more
 Put us to fight the bus'ness o'er,
 Get up and mount thy steed ; dispatch,
 And let us both their motions watch.

Quoth Ralph, I should not, if I were 745
 In case for action, now be here ;
 Nor have I turn'd my back, or hang'd
 An arse, for fear of being bang'd.

It was for you I got these harms,
 Advent'ring to fetch off your arms. 750

The blows and drubs I have receiv'd
 Have bruis'd my body, and bereav'd
 My limbs of strength : unless you stoop
 And reach your hands to pull me up,
 I shall lie here, and be a prey 755
 To those who now are run away.

That thou shalt not (quoth Hudibras) :
 We read the Ancients held it was
 More honourable far *servare*
Civem than slay an adversary : 760
 The one we oft to-day have done,
 The other shall dispatch anon ;

And, though thou'rt of a diff'rent church,
I will not leave thee in the lurch.

This said, he jogg'd his good steed nigher, 765

And steer'd him gently t'wards the Squire,

Then, bowing down his body, stretch'd

His hand out, and at Ralpho reach'd;

When Trulla, whom he did not mind,

Charg'd him like lightening behind. 770

She had been long in search about

Magnano's wound, to find it out,

But could find none, nor where the shot

That had so startled him was got;

But, having found the worst was past, 775

She fell to her own work at last,

The pillage of the prisoners,

Which in all feats of arms was hers:

And now to plunder Ralph she flew,

When Hudibras his hard fate drew 780

To succour him; for as he bow'd

To help him up, she laid a load

Of blows so heavy, and plac'd so well,

On th' other side, that down he fell.

Yield, scoundrel base (quoth she), or die; 785

Thy life is mine, and liberty:

But if thou think'st I took thee tardy,

And dar'st presume to be so hardy

To try thy fortune o'er afresh,

I'll wave my title to thy flesh, 790

Thy arms and baggage, now my right,

And, if thou hast the heart to try't,

I'll lend thee back thyself awhile,

And once more, for that carcase vile,

Fight upon tick.—Quoth Hudibras, 795

Thou offer'st nobly, valiant lass,
 And I shall take thee at thy word :
 First let me rise and take my sword.
 That sword which has so oft this day
 Through squadrons of my foes made way, 800
 And some to other worlds dispatch,
 Now, with a feeble spinster matcht,
 Will blush, with blood ignoble stain'd,
 By which no honour's to be gain'd.
 But if thou'lt take m' advice in this, 805
 Consider, whilst thou may'st, what 'tis
 To interrupt a victor's course
 B' opposing such a trivial force :
 For if with conquest I come off
 (And that I shall do sure enough), 810
 Quarter thou canst not have nor grace,
 By law of arms, in such a case ;
 Both which I now do offer freely.
 I scorn (quoth she), thou coxcomb silly
 (Clapping her hand upon her breech, 815
 To show how much she priz'd his speech),
 Quarter or counsel from a foe ;
 If thou canst force me to it, do :
 But lest it should again be sed,
 When I have once more won thy head, 820
 I took thee napping, unprepar'd,
 Arm, and betake thee to thy guard.
 This said, she to her tackle fell,
 And on the Knight let fall a peal
 Of blows so fierce, and press'd so home, 825
 That he retir'd, and follow'd 's bum.
 Stand to't, quoth she, or yield to mercy ;
 It is not fighting *arsie-versie*

Shall serve thy turn.—This stirr'd his spleen
 More than the danger he was in, 830
 The blows he felt or was to feel,
 Although th' already made him reel.
 Honour, despite, revenge, and shame,
 At once into his stomach came ;
 Which fir'd it so, he rais'd his arm 835
 Above his head and rain'd a storm
 Of blows so terrible and thick,
 As if he meant to hash her quick.
 But she upon her truncheon took them,
 And by oblique diversion broke them, 840
 Waiting an opportunity
 To pay all back with usury,
 Which long she fail'd not of ; for now
 The Knight with one dead-doing blow
 Resolving to decide the fight, 845
 And she with quick and cunning sleight
 Avoiding it, the force and weight
 He charg'd upon it was so great
 As almost sway'd him to the ground.
 No sooner she th' advantage found, 850
 But in she flew ; and, seconding
 With home-made thrust the heavy swing,
 She laid him flat upon his side,
 And, mounting on his trunk astride,
 Quoth she, I told thee what would come 855
 Of all thy vapouring, base scum :
 Say, will the law of arms allow

857—866 VAR.

' Shall I have quarter now, you ruffin ?
 Or wilt thou be worse than thy huffing ?
 Thou saidst th' would'st kill me, marry would'st thou ?
 Why dost thou not, thou Jack-a-nods thou ?

I may have grace and quarter now ?
 Or wilt thou rather break thy word,
 And stain thine honour than thy sword ? 860
 A man of war to damn his soul,
 In basely breaking his parole !
 And when before the fight th' hadst vow'd
 To give no quarter in cold blood ;
 Now thou hast got me for a Tartar, 865
 To make me 'gainst my will take quarter,
 Why dost not put me to the sword,
 But cowardly fly from thy word ?

Quoth Hudibras, The day's thine own ;
 Thou and thy stars have cast me down : 870
 My laurels are transplanted now,
 And flourish on thy conqu'ring brow :
 My loss of honour's great enough,
 Thou need'st not brand it with a scoff :
 Sarcasms may eclipse thine own, 875
 But cannot blur my lost renown :
 I am not now in Fortune's power ;
 He that is down can fall no lower.
 The ancient heroes were illustr'ous
 For being benign, and not blustrous 880
 Against a vanquish'd foe : their swords
 Were sharp and trenchant, not their words ;
 And did in fight but cut work out
 T' employ their courtesies about.

Quoth she, Although thou hast deserv'd, 885
 Basé Slubberdegullion, to be serv'd
 As thou didst vow to deal with me
 If thou hadst got the victory,
 Yet I shall rather act a part
 That suits my fame than thy desert : 890
 Thy arms, thy liberty, beside

All that's on th' outside of thy hide,
 Are mine by military law,
 Of which I will not bate one straw ;
 The rest, thy life and limbs, once more, 895
 Though doubly forfeit, I restore.

Quoth Hudibras, It is too late
 For me to treat or stipulate ;
 What thou command'st I must obey !
 Yet those whom I expugn'd to-day, 900
 Of thine own party, I let go,
 And gave them life and freedom too,
 Both Dogs and Bear, upon their parole,
 Whom I took pris'ners in this quarrel.
 Quoth Trulla, Whether thou or they 905
 Let one another run away,
 Concerns not me ; but was 't not thou
 That gave Crowdero quarter too ?
 Crowdero whom, in irons bound,
 Thou basely threw'st into Lob's pound, 910
 Where still he lies, and with regret
 His gen'rous bowels rage and fret.
 But now thy carcass shall redeem,
 And serve to be exchange'd for him.

This said, the Knight did straight submit, 915
 And laid his weapons at her feet.
 Next he disrob'd his gabardine,
 And with it did himself resign.
 She took it, and forthwith divesting
 The mantle that she wore, said jesting, 920
 Take that, and wear it for my sake ;
 Then threw it o'er his sturdy back.
 And as the French we conquer'd once
 Now give us laws for pantaloons,
 The length of breeches and the gathers, 925

Port-cannons, periwigs, and feathers ;
 Just so the proud insulting lass
 Array'd and dighted Hudibras.

Meanwhile the other champions, yerst
 In hurry of the fight disperst, 930
 Arriv'd, when Trulla won the day,
 To share i' th' honour and the prey,
 And out of Hudibras his hide
 With vengeance to be satisfy'd ;
 Which now they were about to pour 935
 Upon him in a wooden show'r,
 But Trulla thrust herself between,
 And, striding o'er his back agen,
 She brandish'd o'er her head his sword,
 And vow'd they should not break her word : 940
 She 'ad given him quarter, and her blood,
 Or theirs, should make that quarter good ;
 For she was bound by law of arms
 To see him safe from further harms.
 In dungeon deep Crowdero, cast 945
 By Hudibras, as yet lay fast,
 Where, to the hard and ruthless stones,
 His great heart made perpetual moans ;
 Him she resolv'd that Hudibras
 Should ransom, and supply his place. 950

This stopp'd their fury, and the basting
 Which towards Hudibras was hasting ;
 They thought it was but just and right
 That what she had achiev'd in fight
 She should dispose of how she pleas'd ; 955
 Crowdero ought to be releas'd,
 Nor could that any way be done
 So well as this she pitch'd upon :
 For who a better could imagine ?

This therefore they resolv'd t' engage in. 960
 The Knight and Squire first they made
 Rise from the ground where they were laid,
 Then mounted both upon their horses,
 But with their faces to the arses.
 Orsin led Hudibras's beast, 965
 And Talgol that which Ralpho prest ;
 Whom stout Magnano, valiant Cerdon,
 And Colon, waited as a guard on ;
 All ush'ring Trulla in the rear,
 With th' arms of either prisoner. 970
 In this proud order and array
 They put themselves upon their way,
 Striving to reach th' enchanted Castle,
 Where stout Crowdero' in durance lay still.
 Thither with greater speed than shows 975
 And triumph over conquer'd foes
 Do use t' allow, or than the Bears,
 Or pageants borne before lord-mayors,
 Are wont to use, they soon arriv'd,
 In order soldier-like contriv'd, 980
 Still marching in a warlike posture,
 As fit for battle as for muster.
 The Knight and Squire they first unhorse,
 And, bending 'gainst the fort their force,
 They all advanc'd, and round about 985
 Begirt the magical redoubt.
 Magnan' led up in this adventure,
 And made way for the rest to enter :
 For he was skilful in Black Art
 No less than he that built the fort, 990
 And with an iron mace laid flat
 A breach, which straight all enter'd at,
 And in the wooden dungeon found

Crowdero laid upon the ground :
 Him they release from durance base, 905
 Restor'd t' his Fiddle and his case,
 And liberty, his thirsty rage
 With luscious vengeance to assuage :
 For he no sooner was at large,
 But Trulla straight brought on the charge, 1000
 And in the self-same limbo put
 The Knight and Squire where he was shut ;
 Where leaving them in Hockley-i'-th'-hole,
 Their bangs and durance to condole,
 Confin'd and conjur'd into narrow 1005
 Enchanted mansion to know sorrow,
 In the same order and array
 Which they advanc'd, they march'd away.
 But Hudibras, who scorn'd to stoop
 To Fortune, or be said to droop, 1010
 Cheer'd up himself with ends of verse
 And sayings of philosophers.
 Quoth he, Th' one half of man, his mind,
 Is, *sui juris*, unconfin'd,
 And cannot be laid by the heels, 1015
 Whate'er the other moiety feels.
 'Tis not restraint or liberty
 That makes men prisoners or free ;
 But perturbations that possess
 The mind or equanimities. 1020
 The whole world was not half so wide
 To Alexander, when he cry'd
 Because he had but one to subdue,
 As was a paltry narrow tub to
 Diogenes ; who is not said 1025

¹⁰⁰³ VAR. ' t' the wretched hole.'

(For aught that ever I could read)
 To whine, put finger i' th' eye, and sob,
 Because h' had ne'er another tub.
 The Ancients make two sev'ral kinds
 Of prowess in heroic minds, 1030
 The active and the passive val'ant,
 Both which are *pari libra* gallant;
 For both to give blows, and to carry,
 In fights are equi-necessary:
 But in defeats the passive stout 1035
 Are always found to stand it out
 Most desp'rately, and to outdo
 The active 'gainst a conqu'ring foe.
 Though we with blacks and blues are suggil'd,
 Or, as the vulgar say, are cudgel'd, 1040
 He that is valiant and dares fight,
 Though drubb'd, can lose no honour by 't.
 Honour's a lease for lives to come,
 And cannot be extended from
 The legal tenant: 'tis a chattel 1045
 Not to be forfeited in battle.
 If he that in the field is slain
 Be in the bed of honour lain,
 He that is beaten may be sed
 To lie in Honour's truckle-bed. 1050
 For as we see th' eclipsed sun
 By mortals is more gaz'd upon
 Than when, adorn'd with all his light,
 He shines in serene sky most bright;
 So valour in a low estate 1055
 Is most admir'd and wonder'd at.

Quoth Ralph, How great I do not know
 We may by being beaten grow;
 But none that see how here we sit

Will judge us overgrown with wit. 1060
 As Gifted Brethren, preaching by
 A carnal hour-glass, do imply
 Illumination can convey
 Into them what they have to say,
 But not how much ; so well enough 1065
 Know you to charge, but not draw off :
 For who, without a cap and bawble,
 Having subdued a Bear and rabble,
 And might with honour have come off,
 Would put it to a second proof? 1070
 A politic exploit, right fit
 For Presbyterian zeal and wit.

Quoth Hudibras, That cuckoo's tone,
 Ralpho, thou always harp'st upon :
 When thou at any thing would'st rail, 1075
 Thou mak'st Presbytery thy scale

¹⁰⁶¹ ¹⁰⁶² In those days there was always an hour-glass stood by the pulpit, in a frame of iron made on purpose for it, and fastened to the board on which the cushion lay, that it might be visible to the whole congregation ; who, if the sermon did not hold till the glass was out (which was turned up as soon as the text was taken), would say that the preacher was lazy ; and, if he held out much longer, would yawn and stretch, and by those signs signify to the preacher that they began to be weary of his discourse, and wanted to be dismissed. These hour-glasses remained in some churches till within these forty-years. If they liked his discourse, they would sometimes ask him for 'another glass.' ED.

¹⁰⁷² Ralpho looked upon their ill plight to be owing to his master's bad conduct ; and, to vent his resentment, he satirises him in the most affecting part of his character, his religion. This by degrees brings on the old arguments about Synods. The Poet, who thought he had not sufficiently lashed classical assemblies, very judiciously completes it, now there is full leisure for it.

To take the height on't, and explain
 To what degree it is profane.
 Whats'ever will not with (thy what-d'-ye-call)
 Thy Light jump right, thou call'st Synodical; 1080
 As if Presbyt'ry were a standard
 To size whats'ever's to be slander'd.
 Dost not remember how this day
 Thou to my beard wast bold to say
 That thou could'st prove Bear-baiting, equal 1085
 With Synods, orthodox and legal?
 Do, if thou can'st; for I deny't,
 And dare thee to't with all thy light.

Quoth Ralpho, Truly that is no
 Hard matter for a man to do 1090
 That has but any guts in's brains,
 And could believe it worth his pains:
 But since you dare and urge me to it,
 You'll find I've light enough to do it.

Synods are mystical Bear-gardens, 1095
 Where Elders, Deputies, Church-wardens,
 And other Members of the Court,
 Manage the Babylonish sport;
 For Prolocutor, Scribe, and Bear-ward,
 Do differ only in a mere word. 1100
 Both are but sev'ral synagogues
 Of carnal men, and Bears and Dogs:
 Both antichristian assemblies,
 To mischief bent as far's in them lies:
 Both stave and tail, with fierce contests, 1105
 The one with men, the other beasts.
 The diff'rence is, the one fights with
 The tongue, the other with the teeth;
 And that they bait but Bears in this,
 In th' other Souls and Consciences: 1110

Where Saints themselves are brought to stake
 For Gospel-light and Conscience' sake ;
 Expos'd to Scribes and Presbyters,
 Instead of Mastive Dogs and Curs ;
 Than whom they've less humanity, 1115
 For these at souls of men will fly.
 This to the prophet did appear,
 Who in a vision saw a Bear,
 Prefiguring the beastly rage
 Of Church-rule in this latter age ; 1120
 As is demonstrated at full
 By him that baited the Pope's Bull.
 Bears nat'rally are beasts of prey,
 That live by rapine ; so do they.
 What are their Orders, Constitutions, 1125
 Church-censures, Curses, Absolutions,
 But sev'ral mystic chains they make,
 To tie poor Christians to the stake ?
 And then set Heathen officers,
 Instead of Dogs, about their ears. 1130
 For to prohibit and dispense,
 To find out, or to make offence ;
 Of hell and heaven to dispose,
 To play with souls at fast and loose ;
 To set what characters they please, 1135
 And mulcts on sin or godliness ;
 Reduce the Church to Gospel-order,
 By rapine, sacrilege, and murder ;
 To make Presbytery supreme,
 And Kings themselves submit to them ; 1140
 And force all people, though against
 Their consciences, to turn Saints ;
 Must prove a pretty thriving trade,
 When Saints monopolists are made :

When pious frauds and holy shifts 1145
 Are Dispensations and Gifts,
 There godliness becomes mere ware,
 And ev'ry Synod but a fair.
 Synods are whelps o' th' Inquisition,
 A mongrel breed of like pernicion, 1150
 And, growing up, became the sires
 Of Scribes, Commissioners, and Triers :
 Whose bus'ness is, by cunning sleight,
 To cast a figure for men's light ;
 To find, in lines of beard and face, 1155
 The physiognomy of Grace ;
 And by the sound and twang of nose,
 If all be sound within disclose,
 Free from a crack or flaw of sinning,
 As men try pipkins by the ringing ; 1160
 By black caps underlaid with white
 Give certain guess at inward light,

¹¹⁵⁶ These Triers pretended to great skill in this respect ; and, if they disliked the beard or face of a man, they would, for that reason alone, refuse to admit him, when presented to a living, unless he had some powerful friend to support him. "The questions that these men put to the persons to be examined were not abilities and learning, but grace in their hearts, and that with so bold and saucy an inquisition, that some men's spirits trembled at the interrogatories ; they phrasing it so, as if (as was said at the Council of Trent) they had the Holy Ghost in a cloke-bag."

Their questions generally were these, or such like : When were you converted ? Where did you begin to feel the motions of the Spirit ? In what year ? in what month ? in what day ? about what hour of the day had you the secret call, or motion of the Spirit, to undertake and labour in the ministry ? What work of grace has God wrought upon your soul ? And a great many other questions about regeneration, predestination, and the like.

Which Serjeants at the Gospel wear,
 To make the Sp'ritual Calling clear.
 The handkerchief about the neck 1165
 (Canonical cravat of Smeck,
 From whom the institution came,
 When Church and State they set on flame,
 And worn by them as badges then
 Of Spiritual Warfaring-men) 1170
 Judge rightly if Regeneration
 Be of the newest cut in fashion.
 Sure 'tis an orthodox opinion,
 That grace is founded in dominion :
 Great piety consists in pride ; 1175
 To rule is to be sanctify'd :
 To domineer, and to control,
 Both o'er the body and the soul,
 Is the most perfect discipline
 Of Church-rule, and by right divine. 1180
 Bell and the Dragon's chaplains were
 More moderate than these by far :
 For they (poor knaves) were glad to cheat,
 To get their wives and children meat ;
 But these will not be fobb'd off so, 1185
 They must have wealth and power too ;
 Or else with blood and desolation
 They'll tear it out o' th' heart o' th' nation.
 Sure these themselves from primitive
 And Heathen priesthood do derive, 1190
 When Butchers were the only clerks,
 Elders and Presbyters of Kirks ;
 Whose directory was to kill,
 And some believe it is so still.

1166 ' Smectymans' was a club of holders-forth.

The only diff'rence is that then 1195
 They slaughter'd only beasts, now men.
 For then to sacrifice a bullock,
 Or, now and then, a child to Moloch,
 They count a vile abomination,
 But not to slaughter a whole nation. 1200
 Presbytery does but translate
 The papacy to a free state :
 A commonwealth of Popery,
 Where ev'ry village is a See
 As well as Rome, and must maintain 1205
 A tithe-pig metropolitan ;
 Where ev'ry Presbyter and Deacon
 Commands the keys for cheese and bacon,
 And ev'ry hamlet's governed
 By 's Holiness, the Church's head, 1210
 More haughty and severe in 's place
 Than Gregory and Boniface.
 Such Church must, surely, be a monster
 With many heads : for if we conster
 What in th' Apocalypse we find, 1215
 According to th' Apostle's mind,
 'Tis that the whore of Babylon
 With many heads did ride upon ;
 Which heads denote the sinful tribe
 Of Deacon, Priest, Lay-elder, Scribe. 1220
 Lay-elder, Simeon to Levi,
 Whose little finger is as heavy
 As loins of patriarchs, prince-prelate,
 And bishop-secular. This zealot
 Is of a mongrel diverse kind, 1225
 Clerick before and Lay behind ;
 A lawless linsey-woolsey brother,
 Half of one order, half another ;

A creature of amphibious nature,
 On land a beast, a fish in water : 1230
 That always preys on grace or sin ;
 A sheep without, a wolf within.
 This fierce inquisitor has chief
 Dominion over men's belief
 And manners ; can pronounce a saint 1235
 Idolatrous, or ignorant,
 When superciliously he sifts
 Through coarsest boulder others' gifts :
 For all men live and judge amiss
 Whose talents jump not just with his ; 1240
 He'll lay on Gifts with hands, and place
 On dullest noddle Light and Grace,
 The manufacture of the Kirk.
 Those pastors are but th' handywork
 Of his mechanic paws, instilling 1245
 Divinity in them by feeling ;
 From whence they start up Chosen Vessels,
 Made by contact, as men get measles.
 So Cardinals, they say, do grope
 At th' other end the new-made Pope. 1250
 Hold, hold, quoth Hudibras, soft fire,
 They say, does make sweet malt. Good Squire,
Festina lentè, not too fast,
 For haste (the proverb says) makes waste.
 The quirks and cavils thou dost make 1255
 Are false and built upon mistake :
 And I shall bring you, with your pack
 Of fallacies, t' Elenchi back ;
 And put your arguments in mood
 And figure to be understood. 1260
 I'll force you by right ratiocination
 To leave your vitiligation,

And make you keep to th' question close
And argue *dialecticōs*.

The question then, to state it first, 1265

Is, which is better or which worst,

Synods or Bears? Bears I avow

To be the worst, and Synods thou;

But to make good th' assertion,

Thou say'st they're really all one. 1270

If so, not worse; for if they're *idem*,

Why then *tantundem dat tantidem*.

For if they are the same, by course

Neither is better, neither worse.

But I deny they are the same, 1275

More than a maggot and I am.

That both are *animalia*

I grant, but not *rationalia*:

For though they do agree in kind,

Specific difference we find; 1280

And can no more make Bears of these,

Than prove my horse is Socrates.

That Synods are Bear-gardens, too,

Thou dost affirm; but I say No:

And thus I prove it, in a word; 1285

Whats'ever Assembly's not empow'r'd

To Censure, Curse, Absolve, and ordain,

Can be no Synod; but Bear-garden

Has no such pow'r; *ergo*, 'tis none:

And so thy sophistry's o'erthrown. 1290

But yet we are beside the quest'on

Which thou didst raise the first contest on:

For that was, Whether Bears are better

Than Synod-men? I say *Negatur*.

That Bears are beasts, and Synods men, 1295

Is held by all : they're better then ;
 For Bears and Dogs on four legs go,
 As beasts ; but Synod-men on two.
 'Tis true they all have teeth and nails ;
 But prove that Synod-men have tails ; 1300
 Or that a rugged shaggy fur
 Grows o'er the hide of Presbyter ;
 Or that his snout and spacious ears
 Do hold proportion with a Bear's.
 A Bear's a savage beast, of all 1305
 Most ugly and unnatural ;
 Whelp'd without form, until the dam
 Has lickt it into shape and frame :
 But all thy light can ne'er evict,
 That ever Synod-man was lickt, 1310
 Or brought to any other fashion
 Than his own will and inclination.

But thou dost further yet in this
 Oppugn thyself and sense ; that is,
 Thou would'st have Presbyters to go 1315
 For Bears and Dogs, and Bearwards too :
 A strange chimera of beasts and men,
 Made up of pieces het'rogene ;
 Such as in Nature never met
In eodem subjecto yet. 1320

Thy other arguments are all
 Supposures hypothetical,
 That do but beg ; and we may choose
 Either to grant them or refuse.
 Much thou hast said, which I know when 1325
 And where thou stol'st from other men
 (Whereby 'tis plain thy Light and Gifts
 Are all but plagiary shifts),

And is the same that Ranter sed,
 Who, arguing with me, broke my head, 1330
 And tore a handful of my beard:
 The self-same cavils then I heard,
 When, b'ing in hot dispute about
 This controversy, we fell out;
 And what thou know'st I answer'd then 1335
 Will serve to answer thee agen.

Quoth Ralpho, Nothing but th' abuse
 Of human learning you produce;
 Learning, that cobweb of the brain,
 Profane, erroneous, and vain; 1340
 A trade of knowledge as replete
 As others are with fraud and cheat;
 An art t' encumber Gifts and wit,
 And render both for nothing fit;
 Makes Light unactive, dull and troubled, 1345
 Like little David in Saul's doublet:

¹³²⁹ The Ranters were a vile sect that sprung up in those times. Alexander Ross observes, "That they held that God, devil, angels, heaven and hell, &c. were fictions and fables; that Moses, John Baptist, and Christ, were impostors; and what Christ and the Apostles acquainted the world with, as to matter of religion, perished with them; that preaching and praying are useless, and that preaching is but publick lying; that there is an end of all ministry and administrations, and people are to be taught immediately from God," &c.

¹³³⁹ Ralpho was as great an enemy to human learning as Jack Cade and his fellow rebels. Cade's words to Lord Say, before he ordered his head to be cut off: "I am the besom that must sweep the Court clean of such filth as thou art; thou hast most traitorously corrupted the youth of the realm in erecting a grammar-school; and whereas, before, our forefathers had no other books but the Score and the Tally, thou hast caused Printing to be used; and, contrary to the King, his crown and dignity, thou hast built a Paper-

A cheat that scholars put upon
 Other men's reason and their own ;
 A fort of error, to ensconce
 Absurdity and ignorance, 1350
 That renders all the avenues
 To truth impervious and abstruse,
 By making plain things, in debate,
 By art perplext and intricate :
 For nothing goes for Sense or Light, 1355
 That will not with old rules jump right ;
 As if rules were not in the schools
 Deriv'd from truth, but truth from rules.
 This Pagan, Heathenish, invention
 Is good for nothing but contention : 1360
 For as in sword and buckler fight
 All blows do on the target light,
 So, when men argue, the great'st part
 O' th' contest falls on terms of art,

mill. It will be proved to thy face, that thou hast men about thee that usually talk of a noun and a verb, and such abominable words, as no Christian ear can endure to hear."

It was the opinion of those tinkers, tailors, &c. that governed Chelmsford at the beginning of the Rebellion, "That learning had always been an enemy to the Gospel, and that it were a happy thing if there were no universities, and that all books were burned except the Bible."

"I tell you (says a writer of those times) wicked books do as much wound us as the swords of our adversaries; for this manner of learning is superfluous and costly: many tongues and languages are only confusion, and only wit, reason, understanding, and scholarship, are the main means that oppose us, and hinder our cause; therefore, if ever we have the fortune to get the upperhand—we will down with all law and learning, and have no other rule but the Carpenter's, nor any writing or reading but the Score and the Tally."

Until the fustian stuff be spent, 1365
And then they fall to th' argument.
Quoth Hudibras, Friend Ralph, thou hast
Outrun the constable at last :
For thou art fallen on a new
Dispute, as senseless as untrue, 1370
But to the former opposite,
And contrary as black to white :
Mere *disparata* ; that concerning
Presbytery, this human learning ;
Two things s' averse, they never yet 1375
But in thy rambling fancy met.
But I shall take a fit occasion
T' evince thee by' ratiocination,
Some other time in place more proper
Than this we're in ; therefore let's stop here, 1380
And rest our weary'd bones a while,
Already tir'd with other toil.

PART II. CANTO I.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Knight, by damnable Magician,
 Being cast illegally in prison,
 Love brings his action on the case,
 And lays it upon Hudibras.
 How he receives the Lady's visit,
 And cunningly solicits his suit,
 Which she defers; yet, on parole,
 Redeems him from th' enchanted hole.

BUT now, t' observe Romantique method,
 Let bloody steel a while be sheathed,
 And all those harsh and rugged sounds
 Of bastinadoes, cuts, and wounds,
 Exchang'd to love's more gentle style,

5

Arg. ^{1 2} VAR.

'The Knight being clapp'd by th' heels in prison,
 The last unhappy expedition.'

Arg. ⁵ VAR. 'How he reviv's,' &c.

¹ The beginning of this Second Part may perhaps seem strange and abrupt to those who do not know that it was written on purpose in imitation of Virgil, who begins the Fourth Book of his *Æneids* in the very same manner, 'At regina gravi,' &c. And this is enough to satisfy the curiosity of those who believe that invention and fancy ought to be measured, like cases in law, by precedents, or else they are in the power of the critic.

² VAR. 'Let rusty steel,' and 'To trusty steel.'

³⁻⁸ VAR. 'And unto love turn we our style,

To let our readers breathe a while,

By this time tir'd with th' horrid sounds

Of blows, and cuts, and blood, and wounds.'

To let our reader breathe a while.
 In which, that we may be as brief as
 Is possible, by way of preface :
 Is 't not enough to make one strange,
 That some men's fancies should ne'er change, 10
 But make all people do and say
 The same things still the self-same way ?
 Some writers make all ladies purloin'd,
 And knights pursuing like a whirlwind :
 Others make all their knights, in fits 15
 Of jealousy, to lose their wits ;
 Till drawing blood o' th' dames, like witches,
 They're forthwith cur'd of their capriches.
 Some always thrive in their amours,
 By pulling plasters off their sores 20
 As cripples do to get an alms,
 Just so do they, and win their dames.
 Some force whole regions, in despite
 O' geography, to change their site ;
 Make former times shake hands with latter, 25
 And that which was before come after.
 But those that write in rhyme still make
 The one verse for the other's sake ;
 For one for sense, and one for rhyme,
 I think 's sufficient at one time. 30

But we forget in what sad plight
 We whilom left the captiv'd Knight
 And pensive Squire, both bruis'd in body,
 And conjur'd into safe custody.
 Tir'd with dispute, and speaking Latin, 35
 As well as basting and Bear-baiting,

¹⁰ VAR. 'That a man's fancy.'

³² VAR. 'We lately.'

And desperate of any course
 To free himself by wit or force,
 His only solace was, that now
 His dog-bolt fortune was so low, 40
 That either it must quickly end,
 Or turn about again, and mend ;
 In which he found th' event, no less
 Than other times, beside his guess.

There is a tall long-sided dame, 45
 (But wond'rous light) ycleped Fame,
 That like a thin cameleon boards
 Herself on air, and eats her words ;
 Upon her shoulders wings she wears
 Like hanging sleeves, lin'd through with ears, 50
 And eyes, and tongues, as poets list,
 Made good by deep mythologist :
 With these she through the welkin flies,
 And sometimes carries truth, oft lies ;
 With letters hung, like eastern pigeons, 55
 And Mercuries of furthest regions ;
 Diurnals writ for regulation
 Of lying, to inform the nation,
 And by their public use to bring down
 The rate of whetstones in the kingdom. 60
 About her neck a packet-mail,
 Fraught with advice, some fresh, some stale ;
 Of men that walk'd when they were dead,
 And cows of monsters brought to bed ;
 Of hailstones big as pullets' eggs, 65

⁴⁶ The beauty of this consists in the double meaning. The first alludes to Fame's living on Report: the second is an insinuation, that if a report is narrowly enquired into, and traced up to the original author, it is made to contradict itself.

And puppies whelp'd with twice two legs ;
 A blazing star seen in the west,
 By six 'or seven men at least.

Two trumpets she does sound at once,
 But both of clean contrary tones :

70

But whether both with the same wind,
 Or one before and one behind,

We know not, only this can tell,

The one sounds vilely, th' other well ;

And therefore vulgar authors name

75

Th' one Good, the other evil Fame.

This tattling gossip knew too well

What mischief Hudibras befell ;

And straight the spiteful tidings bears

Of all, to th' unkind Widow's ears.

80

Democritus ne'er laugh'd so loud

To see bawds carted through the crowd,

Or funerals, with stately pomp,

March slowly on in solemn dump,

As she laugh'd out, until her back,

85

As well as sides, was like to crack.

She vow'd she would go see the sight,

And visit the distressed Knight ;

To do the office of a neighbour,

And be a gossip at his labour ;

90

And from his wooden jail the stocks

To set at large his fetter-locks ;

And by exchange, parole, or ransom,

To free him from th' enchanted mansion.

This b'ing resolv'd, she call'd for hood

95

And usher, implements abroad

77 VAR. ' Twattling gossip'.

91 VAR. ' That is to see him deliver'd safe

Of's wooden burden, and Squire Raph.'

Which ladies wear, beside a slender
 Young waiting damsel to attend her.
 All which appearing, on she went
 To find the Knight, in limbo pent ; 100
 And 'twas not long before she found
 Him and his stout Squire in the pound,
 Both coupled in enchanted tether
 By further leg behind together.
 For as he sat upon his rump, 105
 His head, like one in doleful dump,
 Between his knees, his hands apply'd
 Unto his ears on either side,
 And by him in another hole
 Afflicted Ralpho, cheek by jowl ; 110
 She came upon him in his wooden
 Magician's circle on the sudden,
 As spirits do t' a conjurer
 When in their dreadful shapes th' appear.
 No sooner did the Knight perceive her, 115
 But straight he fell into a fever,
 Inflam'd all over with disgrace
 To be seen by her in such a place ;
 Which made him hang his head, and scowl,
 And wink, and goggle like an owl : 120
 He felt his brains begin to swim,
 When thus the Dame accosted him.
 . This place (quoth she) they say 's enchanted,

111 112 There was never certainly a pleasanter scene
 imagined than this before us ; it is the most diverting in-
 cident in the whole Poem. The unlucky and unexpected
 visit of the Lady, the attitude and surprise of the Knight,
 the confusion and blushes of the lover, and the satirical
 raillery of a mistress, are represented in lively colours, and
 conspire to make this interview wonderfully pleasing.

And with delinquent spirits haunted,
 That here are ty'd in chains and scourg'd 125
 Until their guilty crimes be purg'd :
 Look, there are two of them appear
 Like persons I have seen somewhere.
 Some have mistaken blocks and posts
 For spectres, apparitions, ghosts, 130
 With saucer eyes, and horns ; and some
 Have heard the devil beat a drum ;
 But, if our eyes are not false glasses
 That give a wrong account of faces,
 That beard and I should be acquainted 135
 Before 'twas conjur'd and enchanted ;
 For, though it be disfigur'd somewhat,
 As if 't had lately been in combat,
 It did belong to a worthy Knight,
 Howe'er this goblin is come by 't. 140

When Hudibras the Lady heard
 Discoursing thus upon his beard,
 And speak with such respect and honour
 Both of the beard and the beard's owner,
 He thought it best to set as good 145
 A face upon it as he could ;
 And thus he spoke : Lady, your bright
 And radiant eyes are in the right ;
 The beard 's th' identique beard you knew,
 The same numerically true ; 150
 Nor is it worn by fiend or elf,
 But its proprietor himself.

O heavens ! quoth she, can that be true ?
 I do begin to fear 'tis you ;
 Not by your individual whiskers, 155

But by your dialect and discourse,
 That never spoke to man or beast
 In notions vulgarly exprest :
 But what malignant star, alas !
 Has brought you both to this sad pass ? 160

Quoth he, The fortune of the war,
 Which I am less afflicted for
 Than to be seen with beard and face
 By you in such a homely case.

Quoth she, Those need not be asham'd 165
 For being honourably maim'd :
 If he that is in battle conquer'd
 Have any title to his own beard,
 Though yours be sorely lugg'd and torn,
 It does your visage more adorn 170
 Than if 'twere prun'd, and starch'd, and lander'd,
 And cut square by the Russian standard.

A torn beard 's like a tatter'd ensign ;
 That 's bravest which there are most rents in.
 That petticoat about your shoulders 175
 Does not so well become a soldier's ;
 And I'm afraid they are worse handled,
 Although i' th' rear your beard the van led ;
 And those uneasy bruises make
 My heart for company to ake, 180
 To see so worshipful a friend
 I' th' pillory set, at the wrong end.

Quoth Hudibras, This thing call'd Pain
 Is (as the learned Stoics maintain)
 Not bad *simpliciter*, nor good, 185
 But merely as 'tis understood.
 Sense is deceitful, and may feign

As well in counterfeiting pain
 As other gross phenomenas,
 In which it oft mistakes the case. 190
 But since th' immortal intellect
 (That's free from error and defect,
 Whose objects still persist the same)
 Is free from outward bruise or maim,
 Which nought external can expose 195
 To gross material bangs or blows,
 It follows we can ne'er be sure
 Whether we pain or not endure ;
 And just so far are sore and griev'd
 As by the fancy is believ'd. 200
 Some have been wounded with conceit,
 And dy'd of mere opinion straight ;
 Others, though wounded sore in reason,
 Felt no contusion nor discretion.
 A Saxon duke did grow so fat 205
 That mice (as histories relate)
 Ate grots and labyrinths to dwell in
 His postique parts, without his feeling ;
 Then how is 't possible a kick
 Should e'er reach that way to the quick ? 210
 Quoth she, I grant it is in vain
 For one that 's basted to feel pain,
 Because the pangs his bones endure
 Contribute nothing to the cure ;
 Yet honour hurt is wont to rage 215
 With pain no med'cine can assuage.
 Quoth he, That honour 's very squeamish
 That takes a basting for a blemish ;
 For what 's more hon'able than scars,
 Or skin to tatters rent in wars ? 220
 Some have been beaten till they know

What wood a cudgel 's of by th' blow ;
 Some kick'd until they can feel whether
 A shoe be Spanish or neat's leather ;
 And yet have met, after long running, 225
 With some whom they have taught that cunning.
 The furthest way about t' o'ercome
 In th' end does prove the nearest home.
 By laws of learned duellists,
 They that are bruis'd with wood or fists, 230
 And think one beating may for once
 Suffice, are cowards and pultrons ;
 But if they dare engage t' a second,
 They're stout and gallant fellows reckon'd.
 Th' old Romans freedom did bestow, 235
 Our princes worship, with a blow.
 King Pyrrhus cur'd his splenetic
 And testy courtiers with a kick.
 The Negus, when some mighty lord
 Or potentate 's to be restor'd, 240
 And pardon'd for some great offence
 With which he 's willing to dispense,
 First has him laid upon his belly,
 Then beaten back and side t' a jelly :
 That done, he rises, humbly bows, 245
 And gives thanks for the princely blows ;
 Departs not meanly proud, and boasting
 Of his magnificent rib-roasting.
 The beaten soldier proves most manful
 That, like his sword, endures the anvil ; 250
 And justly 's held more formidable,

232 VAR. ' Poltrons.'

239 A king of Ethiopia.

241 242 VAR. ' To his good grace for some offence
 Forfeit before, and pardon'd since.'

The more his valour 's malleable :
 But he that fears a bastinado
 Will run away from his own shadow.
 And though I'm now in durance fast 255
 By our own party basely cast,
 Ransom, exchange, parole refus'd,
 And worse than by the en'my us'd ;
 In close *catasta* shut, past hope
 Of wit or valour to elope ; 260
 As beards, the nearer that they tend
 To th' earth, still grow more reverend,
 And cannons shoot the higher pitches
 The lower we let down their breeches,
 I'll make this low dejected fate 265
 Advance me to a greater height.

Quoth she, You've almost made me' in love
 With that which did my pity move.
 Great wits and valours, like great states,
 Do sometimes sink with their own weights : 270
 Th' extremes of glory and of shame,
 Like east and west, become the same :
 No Indian prince has to his palace
 More foll'wers than a thief to th' gallows.
 But, if a beating seem so brave, 275
 What glories must a whipping have ?
 Such great achievements cannot fail
 To cast salt on a woman's tail :
 For if I thought your nat'ral talent
 Of passive courage were so gallant, 280
 As you strain hard to have it thought,
 I could grow amorous and dote.

When Hudibras this language heard,
 He prick'd up 's ears, and strok'd his beard ;
 Thought he, This is the lucky hour, 285

Wines work when vines are in the flow'r :
 This crisis then I'll set my rest on,
 And put her boldly to the quest'on.

Madam, what you would seem to doubt
 Shall be to all the world made out ; 290
 How I've been drubb'd, and with what spirit
 And magnanimity I bear it :
 And if you doubt it to be true,
 I'll stake myself down against you ;
 And if I fail in love or troth, 295
 Be you the winner and take both.

Quoth she, I've heard old cunning stagers
 Say, fools for arguments use wagers ;
 And, though I prais'd your valour, yet
 I did not mean to baulk your wit ; 300
 Which if you have, you must needs know
 What I have told you before now,
 And you b' experiment have prov'd ;
 I cannot love where I'm belov'd.

Quoth Hudibras, 'Tis a caprich 305
 Beyond th' infliction of a witch ;
 So cheats to play with those still aim
 That do not understand the game.
 Love in your heart as idly burns
 As fire in antique Roman urns 310
 'To warm the dead, and vainly light
 Those only that see nothing by't.
 Have you not power to entertain,
 And render love for love again ;
 As no man can draw in his breath 315
 At once, and force out air beneath ?
 Or do you love yourself so much,
 To bear all rivals else a grutch ?
 What fate can lay a greater curse

Than you upon yourself would force ? 320
 For Wedlock without love, some say,
 Is but a lock without a key.

It is a kind of rape to marry
 One that neglects or cares not for ye :
 For what does make it ravishment 325

But b'ing against the mind's consent ?
 A rape that is the more inhuman,
 For being acted by a woman.

Why are you fair, but to entice us
 To love you, that you may despise us ? 330

But though you cannot love, you say,
 Out of your own fanatic way,
 Why should you not at least allow

Those that love you to do so too ?
 For, as you fly me, and pursue 335

Love more averse, so I do you ;
 And am by your own doctrine taught
 To practise what you call a fault.

Quoth she, If what you say is true,
 You must fly me as I do you ; 340

But 'tis not what we do, but say,
 In love and preaching, that must sway.

Quoth he, To bid me not to love
 Is to forbid my pulse to move,

My beard to grow, my ears to prick up, 345
 Or (when I'm in a fit) to hiccup.

Command me to piss out the moon,
 And 'twill as easily be done.

Love's pow'r 's too great to be withstood
 By feeble human flesh and blood. 350

'Twas he that brought upon his knees

The hec't'ring kill-cow Hercules,
 'Transform'd his leager-lion's skin
 T' a petticoat, and made him spin ;
 Seiz'd on his club, and made it dwindle 355
 T' a feeble distaff and a spindle :
 'Twas he that made emp'rors gallants
 To their own sisters and their aunts ;
 Set Popes and Cardinals agog,
 To play with pages at leap-frog : 360
 'Twas he that gave our Senate purges,
 And fluxt the House of many a burgess ;
 Made those that represent the nation
 Submit, and suffer amputation ;
 And all the Grandees o' th' Cabal 365
 Adjourn to tubs at spring and fall.
 He mounted Synod-men and rode 'em
 To Dirty-Lane and Little Sodom ;
 Made 'em curvet like Spanish Jenets,
 And take the ring at Madam ——'s. 370
 'Twas he that made Saint Francis do
 More than the devil could tempt him to,
 In cold and frosty weather grow
 Enamour'd of a wife of snow ;
 And though she were of rigid temper, 375
 With melting flames accost and tempt her ;
 Which after in enjoyment quenching,
 He hung a garland on his engine.

³⁷⁰ “ Stennet was the person whose name was dashed,” says Sir Roger L'Estrange, ‘Key to Hudibras.’ “ Her husband was by profession a broom-man and lay-elder. She followed the laudible employment of bawding, and managed several intrigues for those Brothers and Sisters whose purity consisted chiefly in the whiteness of their linen.”

Quoth she, If love have these effects,
 Why is it not forbid our sex? 380
 Why is't not damn'd and interdicted
 For diabolical and wicked?
 And sung, as out of tune, against,
 As Turk and Pope are by the Saints?
 I find I've greater reason for it, 385
 Than I believ'd before, t' abhor it.

Quoth Hudibras, These sad effects
 Spring from your heathenish neglects
 Of Love's great pow'r, which he returns
 Upon yourselves with equal scorns, 390
 And those who worthy lovers slight,
 Plagues with prepost'rous appetite:
 This made the beauteous Queen of Crete
 To take a town-bull for her sweet;
 And from her greatness stoop so low, 395
 To be the rival of a cow:
 Others to prostitute their great hearts
 To be baboons' and monkeys' sweethearts:
 Some with the devil himself in league grow,
 By's representative a Negro. 400
 'Twas this made Vestal maid love-sick,
 And venture to be bury'd quick:
 Some by their fathers and their brothers
 To be made mistresses and mothers.
 'Tis this that proudest dames enamours 405
 On lacquies and *valets des chambres*;
 Their haughty stomachs overcomes,
 And makes them stoop to dirty grooms;
 To slight the world, and to disparage
 Claps, issue, infamy, and marriage. 410

Quoth she, These judgments are severe,
 Yet such as I should rather bear
 Than trust men with their oaths, or prove
 Their faith and secrecy in love.

Says he, There is as weighty reason 415
 For secrecy in love as treason.

Love is a burglarer, a felon,
 That at the windore eye does steal in
 To rob the heart, and with his prey
 Steals out again a closer way, 420

Which whosoever can discover,
 He's sure (as he deserves) to suffer.
 Love is a fire, that burns and sparkles
 In men as nat'rally as in charcoals,

Which sooty chemists stop in holes 425
 When out of wood they extract coals ;

So lovers should their passions choke,
 That though they burn, they may not smoke.

'Tis like that sturdy thief that stole
 And dragg'd beasts backward into 's hole ; 430

So love does lovers, and us men
 Draws by the tails into his den,
 That no impression may discover
 And trace t' his cave the wary lover.

But if you doubt I should reveal 435
 What you intrust me under seal,

I'll prove myself as close and virtuous
 As your own secretary' Albertus.

Quoth she, I grant you may be close 440
 In hiding what your aims propose :

Love-passions are like parables,
 By which men still mean something else :

Though love be all the world's pretence,
 Money's the mythologic sense,
 The real substance of the shadow, 415
 Which all address and courtship's made to.

Thought he, I understand your play,
 And how to quit you your own way :
 He that will win his dame must do
 As love does when he bends his bow ; 450
 With one hand thrust the lady from,
 And with the other pull her home.

I grant, quoth he, wealth is a great
 Provocative to am'rous heat :
 It is all philtres and high diet 455
 That makes love rampant and to fly out :

'Tis beauty always in the flower,
 That buds and blossoms at fourscore :
 'Tis that by which the sun and moon
 At their own weapons are outdone : 460
 That makes knights-errant fall in trances,

And lay about 'em in romances :
 'Tis virtue, wit, and worth, and all
 That men divine and sacred call ;

For what is worth in any thing 465
 But so much money as 'twill bring ?
 Or what but riches is there known
 Which man can solely call his own,

In which no creature goes his half,
 Unless it be to squint and laugh ? 470
 I do confess, with goods and land,
 I'd have a wife at second-hand ;

And such you are : nor is 't your person
 My stomach 's set so sharp and fierce on,
 But 'tis (your better part) your riches 475
 That my enamour'd heart bewitches :

Let me your fortune but possess,
 And settle your person how you please ;
 Or make it o'er in trust to th' devil,
 You'll find me reasonable and civil. 480

Quoth she, I like this plainness better
 Than false mock-passion, speech, or letter,
 Or any feat of qualm or sowning ;
 But hanging of yourself or drowning ;
 Your only way with me to break 485
 Your mind is breaking of your neck :
 For as when merchants break, o'erthrown
 Like nine-pins, they strike others down,
 So that would break my heart ; which done,
 My tempting fortune is your own. 490

These are but trifles ; ev'ry lover
 Will damn himself over and over,
 And greater matters undertake,
 For a less worthy mistress' sake :
 Yet they're the only ways to prove 495
 Th' unfeign'd realities of love ;
 For he that hangs, or beats out 's brains,
 The devil 's in him if he feigns.

Quoth Hudibras, This way 's too rough
 For mere experiment and proof ; 500
 It is no jesting trivial matter
 To swing i' th' air, or dive in water,
 And like a water-witch try love ;
 That's to destroy, and not to prove :
 As if a man should be dissected, 505
 To find what part is disaffected :
 Your better way is to make over,
 In trust, your fortune to you lover.

Trust is a trial ; if it break,
 'Tis not so desp'rate as a neck : 510
 Beside, th' experiment 's more certain ;
 Men venture necks to gain a fortune :
 The soldier does it ev'ry day
 (Eight to the week) for sixpence pay ;
 Your pettifoggers damn their souls, 515
 To share with knaves in cheating fools ;
 And merchants, vent'ring through the main,
 Slight pirates, rocks, and horns, for gain.
 This is the way I advise you to ;
 Trust me, and see what I will do. 520

Quoth she, I should be loth to run
 Myself all th' hazard, and you none ;
 Which must be done, unless some deed
 Of yours aforesaid do precede :
 Give but yourself one gentle swing 525
 For trial, and I'll cut the string ;
 Or give that rev'rend head a maul,
 Or two or three, against a wall,
 To show you are a man of mettle,
 And I'll engage myself to settle. 530

Quoth he, My head's not made of brass,
 As Friar Bacon's noddle was,
 Nor (like the Indian's scull) so tough
 That, authors say, 'twas musket-proof ;
 As it had need to be, to enter 535
 As yet on any new adventure.
 You see what bangs it has endur'd,
 That would, before new feats, be cur'd :
 But if that's all you stand upon,
 Here strike me, Luck, it shall be done. 540

Quoth she, The matter's not so far gone
 As you suppose ; two words t' a bargain :

That may be done, and time enough,
 When you have given downright proof :
 And yet 'tis no fantastic pique 545
 I have to love, nor coy dislike ;
 'Tis no implicit nice aversion
 T' your conversation, mien, or person ;
 But a just fear lest you should prove
 False and perfidious in love : 550
 For, if I thought you could be true,
 I could love twice as much as you.

Quoth he, My faith as adamantin
 As chains of Destiny I'll maintain ;
 True as Apollo ever spoke, 555
 Or oracle from heart of oak :
 And if you'll give my flame but vent,
 Now in close hugger-mugger pent,
 -And shine upon me but benignly
 With that one and that other pigsney, 560
 The sun and day shall sooner part
 Than love or you shake off my heart ;
 The sun, that shall no more dispense
 His own, but your bright influence.
 I'll carve your name on barks of trees 565
 With true-love-knots and flourishes,
 That shall infuse eternal spring
 And everlasting flourishing ;
 Drink ev'ry letter on 't in stum,
 And make it brisk Champaign become. 570
 Where'er you tread, your foot shall set
 The primrose and the violet ;
 All spices, perfumes, and sweet powders,
 Shall borrow from your breath their odours ;
 Nature her charter shall renew, 575
 And take all lives of things from you ;

The world depend upon your eye,
 And, when you frown upon it, die :
 Only our loves shall still survive,
 New worlds and Natures to outlive, 580
 And like to heralds' moons remain
 All crescents, without change or wane.

Hold, hold, quoth she, no more of this ;
 Sir Knight, you take your aim amiss ;
 For you will find it a hard chapter 585
 To catch me with poetic rapture,
 In which your Mastery of Art
 Doth shew itself, and not your heart ;
 Nor will you raise in mine combustion
 By dint of high heroic fustian. 590
 She that with poetry is won
 Is but a desk to write upon ;
 And what men say of her they mean
 No more than on the thing they lean.
 Some with Arabian spices strive 595
 T' embalm her cruelly alive ;
 Or season her, as French cooks use
 Their *haut-gousts*, *bouilles*, or *ragousts* ;
 Use her so barbarously ill
 To grind her lips upon a mill, 600
 Until the *facet doublet* doth
 Fit their rhymes rather than her mouth ;
 Her mouth, compar'd t' an oyster's, with
 A row of pearl in 't 'stead of teeth.
 Others make posies of her cheeks, 605
 Where red and whitest colours mix ;
 In which the lily and the rose
 For Indian lake and ceruse goes.
 The sun and moon, by her bright eyes
 Eclips'd and darken'd in the skies, 610

Are but black patches that she wears,
 Cut into suns, and moons, and stars ;
 By which astrologers, as well
 As those in heav'n above, can tell
 What strange events they do foreshow 615
 Unto her under-world below.
 Her voice the music of the spheres,
 So loud it deafens mortals' ears,
 As wise philosophers have thought,
 And that's the cause we hear it not. 620
 This has been done by some, who those
 Th' ador'd in rhyme would kick in prose ;
 And in those ribands would have hung
 Of which melodiously they sung.
 That have the hard fate to write best 625
 Of those still that deserve it least :
 It matters not how false or forc'd,
 So the best things be said o' th' worst ;
 It goes for nothing when 'tis sed,
 Only the arrow's drawn to th' head, 630
 Whether it be a swan or goose
 They level at : so shepherds use
 To set the same mark on the hip
 Both of their sound and rotten sheep :
 For wits that carry low or wide, 635
 Must be aim'd higher, or beside
 The mark, which else they ne'er come nigh
 But when they take their aim awry.
 But I do wonder you should choose
 This way t' attack me with your Muse, 640
 As one cut out to pass your tricks on,
 With Fulhams of poetic fiction.

⁶⁴² A cant word for false dice.

I rather hop'd I should no more
 Hear from you o' th' gallanting score ;
 For hard dry bastings us'd to prove 645
 The readiest remedies of love
 Next a dry diet : but if those fail,
 Yet this uneasy loop-hol'd jail,
 In which y' are hamper'd by the fetlock,
 Cannot but put y' in mind of wedlock ; 650
 Wedlock, that's worse than any hole here,
 If that may serve you for a cooler
 T' allay your mettle, all agog
 Upon a wife, the heavier clog :
 Nor rather thank your gentler fate, 655
 That for a bruis'd or broken pate
 Has freed you from those knobs that grow
 Much harder on the marry'd brow.
 But if no dread can cool your courage
 From vent'ring on that dragon, marriage ; 660
 Yet give me quarter, and advance
 To nobler aims your puissance ;
 Level at beauty and at wit,
 The fairest mark is easiest hit.

Quoth Hudibras, I'm beforehand 665
 In that already with your command ;
 For where does beauty and high wit
 But in your Constellation meet ?

Quoth she, What does a match imply
 But likeness and equality ? 670
 I know you cannot think me fit
 To be th' yokefellow of your wit ;
 Nor take one of so mean deserts
 To be the partner of your parts ;
 A grace which, if I could believe,
 I've not the conscience to receive. 675

That conscience, quoth Hudibras,
 Is misinform'd : I'll state the case.
 A man may be a legal doner
 Of any thing whereof he's owner, 680
 And may confer it where he lists,
 I' th' judgment of all casuists :
 Then wit, and parts, and valour, may
 Be ali'nated and made away
 By those that are proprietors, 685
 As I may give or sell my horse.

Quoth she, I grant the case is true
 And proper 'twixt your horse and you :
 But whether I may take, as well
 As you may give away or sell ? 690
 Buyers, you know, are bid beware ;
 And worse than thieves receivers are.
 How shall I answer Hue and Cry
 For a Roan-gelding, twelve hands high,
 All spurr'd and switch'd, a lock on 's hoof, 695
 A sorrel mane ? Can I bring proof
 Where, when, by whom, and what y' were sold for,
 And in the open market told for ?
 Or, should I take you for a stray,
 You must be kept a year and day 700
 (Ere I can own you) here i' th' pound,
 Where, if y' are sought, you may be found ;
 And in the mean time I must pay
 For all your provender and hay.

Quoth he, It stands me much upon 705
 T' enervate this objection,
 And prove myself, by topic clear,
 No gelding, as you would infer.
 Loss of virility 's averr'd
 To be the cause of loss of beard, 710

That does (like embryo in the womb)
 Abortive on the chin become :
 This first a woman did invent
 In envy of man's ornament,
 Semiramis of Babylon,
 Who first of all cut men o' th' stone
 To mar their beards, and laid foundation
 Of sow-geldering operation.

715

Look on this beard, and tell me whether
 Eunuchs wear such, or geldings either ?
 Next it appears I am no horse,
 That I can argue and discourse,
 Have but two legs, and ne'er a tail.

720

Quoth she, That nothing will avail ;
 For some philosophers of late here
 Write men have four legs by Nature,
 And that 'tis custom makes them go
 Erroneously upon but two ;

725

As 'twas in Germany made good
 B' a boy that lost himself in a wood,
 And growing down t' a man, was wont
 With wolves upon all four to hunt.

730

As for your reasons drawn from tails,
 We cannot say they're true or false,
 Till you explain yourself and show
 B' experiment 'tis so or no.

735

Quoth he, If you'll join issue on't,
 I'll give you sat'sfact'ry account ;
 So you will promise, if you lose,
 To settle all and be my spouse.

740

That never shall be done (quoth she)
 To one that wants a tail, by me ;
 For tails by Nature sure were meant,
 As well as beards, for ornament ;

And though the vulgar count them homely, 745
 In men or beast they are so comely,
 So gentee, alamode, and handsome,
 I'll never marry man that wants one :
 And till you can demonstrate plain
 You have one equal to your mane, 750
 I'll be torn piecemeal by a horse
 Ere I'll take you for better or worse.
 The Prince of Cambay's daily food
 Is asp, and basilisk, and toad,
 Which makes him have so strong a breath 755
 Each night he stinks a queen to death ;
 Yet I shall rather lie in 's arms
 Than yours on any other terms.

Quoth he, What Nature can afford
 I shall produce, upon my word ; 760
 And if she ever gave that boon
 To man, I'll prove that I have one ;
 I mean by postulate illation,
 When you shall offer just occasion :
 But since y' have yet deny'd to give 765
 My heart, your pris'ner, a reprieve,
 But made it sink down to my heel,
 Let that at least your pity feel ;
 And, for the suff'rings of your martyr,
 Give its poor entertainer quarter ; 770
 And, by discharge or mainprize, grant
 Deliv'ry from this base restraint.

Quoth she, I grieve to see your leg
 Stuck in a hole here like a peg ;
 And if I knew which way to do't 775
 (Your honour safe) I'd let you out.
 That dames by jail-delivery
 Of errant knights have been set free,

When by enchantment they have been,
 And sometimes for it too, laid in ; 780
 Is that which knights are bound to do
 By order, oath, and honour too.
 For what are they renown'd and famous else,
 But aiding of distressed damosels ?
 But for a lady, no ways errant, 785
 To free a knight, we have no warrant
 In any authentical romance,
 Or classic author yet of France ;
 And I'd be loth to have you break
 An ancient custom for a freak, 790
 Or innovation introduce
 In place of things of antique use,
 To free your heels by any course
 That might b' unwholesome to your spurs :
 Which, if I should consent unto, 795
 It is not in my pow'r to do ;
 For 'tis a service must be done ye
 With solemn previous ceremony,
 Which always has been us'd t' untie
 The charms of those who here do lie. 800
 For as the Ancients heretofore
 To Honour's temple had no dore
 But that which thorough Virtue's lay,
 So from this dungeon there's no way
 To honour'd freedom, but by passing 805
 That other virtuous school of lashing ;
 Where knights are kept in narrow lists
 With wooden lockets 'bout their wrists,
 In which they for a while are tenants,
 And for their ladies suffer penance. 810
 Whipping, that's Virtue's governess,
 Tut'ress of arts and sciences,

That mends the gross mistakes of Nature,
 And puts new life into dull matter,
 That lays foundation for renown 815
 And all the honours of the gown.
 This suffer'd, they are set at large,
 And freed with hon'rablè discharge :
 Then, in their robes, the penitentials
 Are straight presented with credentials, 820
 And in their way attended on
 By magistrates of ev'ry town ;
 And, all respect and charges paid,
 They're to their ancient seats convey'd.
 Now if you'll venture, for my sake, 825
 To try the toughness of your back,
 And suffer (as the rest have done)
 The laying of a whipping on
 (And may you prosper in your suit,
 As you with equal vigour do't), 830
 I here engage myself to loose ye,
 And free your heels from caperdewsie.
 But since our sex's modesty
 Will not allow I should be by,
 Bring me on oath a fair account, 835
 And honour too, when you have done 't ;
 And I'll admit you to the place
 You claim as due in my good grace.
 If matrimony and hanging go
 By dest'ny, why not whipping too ? 840
 What med'cine else can cure the fits
 Of lovers when they lose their wits ?
 Love is a boy by poets styl'd,

831 VAR. 'I here engage to be your bayl,
 And free you from the unknighly jayl.'

Then spare the rod, and spoil the child.

A Persian emp'ror whipp'd his grannam, 845

The sea, his mother Venus came on ;

And hence some rev'rend men approve

Of rosemary in making love.

As skilful coopers hoop their tubs

With Lydian and with Phrygian dubs, 850

Why may not whipping have as good

A grace, perform'd in time and mood,

With comely movement, and by art

Raise passion in a lady's heart ?

It is an easier way to make 555

Love by, than that which many take.

Who would not rather suffer whippin,

Than swallow toasts of bits of ribbin ?

Make wicked verses, treats, and faces,

And spell names over with beer-glasses ? 860

Be under vows to hang and die

Love's sacrifice, and all a lye ?

With china-oranges and tarts,

And wining plays, lay baits for hearts ?

Bribe chambermaids with love and money 865

To break no roguish jests upon ye ?

For lilies limn'd on cheeks, and roses,

With painted perfumes hazard noses ?

Or, vent'ring to be brisk and wanton,

Do penance in a paper lantern ? 870

All this you may compound for now,

By suff'ring what I offer you ;

Which is no more than has been done

By knights for ladies long ago.

Did not the great La Mancha do so 875

For the Infanta Del Toboso ?

Did not th' illustrious Bassa make

Himself a slave for Misse's sake,
 And with bull's pizzle, for her love,
 Was taw'd as gentle as a glove? 880

Was not young Florio sent (to cool
 His flame for Biancafiore) to school,
 Where pedant made his pathic bum
 For her sake suffer martyrdom? .

Did not a certain lady whip, 885
 Of late, her husband's own lordship?

And, though a grandee of the House,
 Claw'd him with fundamental blows;
 Ty'd him stark-naked to a bedpost,
 And fir'd his hide as if sh' had rid post; 890

And after in the Sessions court,
 Where whipping's judg'd, had honour for 't?

This swear you will perform, and then
 I'll set you from th' enchanted den,
 And the Magician's circle, clear. 895

Quoth he, I do profess and swear,
 And will perform what you enjoin,
 Or may I never see you mine.

Amen (quoth she), then turn'd about,
 And bid her Squire let him out. 900

But ere an artist could be found
 T' undo the charms another bound,
 The sun grew low and left the skies,
 Put down (some write) by ladies' eyes.

The moon pull'd off her veil of light, 905
 That hides her face by day from sight
 (Mysterious veil, of brightness made,
 That's both her lustre and her shade),
 And in the lantern of the night

With shining horns hung out her light ; 910
 For darkness is the proper sphere
 Where all false glories use t' appear.
 The twinkling stars began to muster,
 And glitter with their borrow'd lustre,
 While sleep the weary'd world reliev'd, 915
 By counterfeiting death reviv'd.
 His whipping penance, till the morn
 Our vot'ry thought it best t' adjourn,
 And not to carry on a work
 Of such importance in the dark, 920
 With erring haste, but rather stay,
 And do't in th' open face of day ;
 And in the mean-time go in quest
 Of next retreat to take his rest.

PART II. CANTO II.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Knight and Squire in hot dispute,
 Within an ace of falling out,
 Are parted with a sudden fright
 Of strange alarm, and stranger sight ;
 With which adventuring to stickle,
 They're sent away in nasty pickle.

'Tis strange how some men's tempers suit
 (Like bawd and brandy) with dispute ;
 That for their own opinions stand fast,
 Only to have them claw'd and canvast ;
 That keep their consciences in cases, 5

² VAR. ' Brandee.'

As fiddlers do their crowds and bases,
 Ne'er to be us'd but when they're bent
 To play a fit for argument;
 Make true and false, unjust and just,
 Of no use but to be discust; 10
 Dispute, and set a paradox
 Like a straight boot upon the stocks,
 And stretch it more unmercifully
 Than Helmont, Montaigne, White, or Tully.
 So th' ancient Stoics, in their porch, 15
 With fierce dispute maintain'd their church,
 Beat out their brains in fight and study
 To prove that virtue is a body,
 That *bonum* is an animal
 Made good with stout polemic brawl; 20
 In which some hundreds on the place
 Were slain outright, and many a face
 Retrench'd of nose, and eyes, and beard,
 To maintain what their sect averr'd.
 All which the Knight and Squire, in wrath, 25
 Had like t' have suffer'd for their faith;
 Each striving to make good his own,
 As by the sequel shall be shown.

The sun had long since in the lap
 Of Thetis taken out his nap, 30
 And, like a lobster boil'd, the morn
 From black to red began to turn;
 When Hudibras, whom thoughts and aking
 'Twixt sleeping kept all night and waking,
 Began to rub his drowsy eyes, 35
 And from his couch prepar'd to rise,
 Resolving to dispatch the deed

¹⁴ VAR. 'Montaigne and Lully.'

He vow'd to do, with trusty speed.
 But first with knocking loud, and bawling,
 He rous'd the Squire, in truckle lolling ; 40
 And after many circumstances,
 Which vulgar authors in romances
 Do use to spend their time and wits on,
 To make impertinent description,
 They got (with much ado) to horse, 45
 And to the Castle bent their course,
 In which he to the Dame before
 To suffer whipping-duty swore.
 Where now arriv'd, and half unharnest,
 To carry on the work in earnest, 50
 He stopp'd, and paus'd upon the sudden,
 And with a serious forehead plodding,
 Sprung a new scruple in his head,
 Which first he scratch'd and after sed.
 Whether it be direct infringing 55
 An oath, if I should wave this swinging,
 And what I've sworn to bear forbear,

⁴⁸ VAR. ' Whipping duly swore.'

⁵⁵ ⁵⁶ This dialogue between Hudibras and Ralph sets before us the hypocrisy and villany of all parties of the Rebels with regard to oaths; what equivocations and evasions they made use of to account for the many perjuries they were daily guilty of, and the several oaths they readily took, and as readily broke, merely as they found it suited their interest, as appears from v. 107, &c. and v. 377, &c. of this Canto, and Part III. Canto III. v. 547, &c. Archbishop Bramhall says, " That the hypocrites of those times, though they magnified the obligation of an oath, yet in their own case dispensed with all oaths, civil, military, and religious. We are now told," says he, " that the oaths we have taken are not to be examined according to the interpretation of men: No! How then?—Surely according to the interpretation of devils."

And so b' equivocation swear ;
 Or whether 't be a lesser sin
 To be forsworn than act the thing, 60
 Are deep and subtle points, which must,
 T' inform my Conscience, be discust ;
 In which to err a tittle may
 To errors infinite make way :
 And therefore I desire to know 65
 Thy judgment ere we further go.
 Quoth Ralpho, Since you do enjoin it,
 I shall enlarge upon the point ;
 And, for my own part, do not doubt
 Th' affirmative may be made out. 70
 But first, to state the case aright,
 For best advantage of our light :
 And thus 'tis : Whether 't be a sin
 To claw and curry your own skin,
 Greater or less than to forbear, 75
 And that you are forsworn forswear.
 But first o' th' first : The inward man,
 And outward, like a clan and clan,
 Have always been at daggers-drawing,
 And one another clapper-clawing : 80
 Not that they really cuff or fence,
 But in a spiritual mystic sense ;
 Which to mistake, and make 'em squabble
 In literal fray, 's abominable.
 'Tis Heathenish, in frequent use 85
 With Pagans and apostate Jews,
 To offer sacrifice of Bridewells,
 Like modern Indians to their idols ;
 And mongrel Christians of our times,
 That expiate less with greater crimes, 90
 And call the foul abomination

Contrition and mortification.

Is't not enough we're bruise'd and kicked
With sinful members of the Wicked ;

Our vessels, that are sanctify'd,

95

Profan'd and curry'd back and side ;

But we must claw ourselves with shameful

And Heathen stripes, by their example ?

Which (were there nothing to forbid it)

Is impious, because they did it.

100

This, therefore, may be justly reckon'd

A heinous sin. Now to the second :

That saints may claim a dispensation

To swear and forswear on occasion,

I doubt not but it will appear

105

With pregnant light ; the point is clear.

Oaths are but words, and words but wind ;

Too feeble implements to bind ;

And hold with deeds proportion, so

As shadows to a substance do.

110

Then when they strive for place, 'tis fit

The weaker vessel should submit.

Although your Church be opposite

To ours as Blackfriars are to White,

In rule and order, yet I grant

115

You are a Reformado saint ;

And what the saints do claim as due,

You may pretend a title to.

But Saints, whom oaths and vows oblige,

Know little of their privilege ;

120

Further (I mean) than carrying on

Some self-advantage of their own.

For if the devil, to serve his turn,

Can tell truth, why the saints should scorn,

When it serves theirs, to swear and lie,

125

I think there's little reason why :
 Else he 'as a greater power than they
 Which 'twere impiety to say.
 We're not commanded to forbear,
 Indefinitely, at all to swear ; 130
 But to swear idly, and in vain,
 Without self-interest or gain.
 For breaking of an oath, and lying,
 Is but a kind of self-denying,
 A saint-like virtue ; and from hence 135
 Some have broke oaths by Providence :
 Some, to the Glory of the Lord,
 Perjur'd themselves, and broke their word ;
 And this the constant rule and practice
 Of all our late apostles' acts is. 140
 Was not the cause at first begun
 With perjury, and carried on ?
 Was there an oath the Godly took,
 But in due time and place they broke ?
 Did we not bring our oaths in first, 145
 Before our plate, to have them burst,
 And cast in fitter models for
 The present use of Church and War ?
 Did not our Worthies of the House,

¹³⁶ When it was first moved in the House of Commons to proceed capitally against the King, Cromwell stood up and told them, "That if any man moved this with design, he should think him the greatest traitor in the world ; but since Providence and necessity had cast them upon it, he should pray to God to bless their counsels." And when he kept the king close prisoner in Carisbrook Castle, contrary to vows and protestations, he affirmed "The Spirit would not let him keep his word." And when, contrary to the public faith, they murdered him, they pretended they could not resist the motions of the Spirit.

Before they broke the peace, break vows ? 150
 For, having freed us first from both
 Th' Allegiance and Suprem'cy oath,
 Did they not next compel the nation
 To take, and break the Protestation ?
 To swear, and after to recant, 155
 The Solemn League and Covenant ?
 To take th' Engagement, and disclaim it ;
 Enforc'd by those who first did frame it ?
 Did they not swear, at first, to fight
 For the King's safety, and his right ; 160
 And after march'd to find him out,
 And charg'd him home with horse and foot ;
 But yet still had the confidence
 To swear it was in his defence ?
 Did they not swear to live and die 165
 With Essex, and straight laid him by ?
 If that were all, for some have swore
 As false as they, if they did no more.
 Did they not swear to maintain Law,
 In which that swearing made a flaw ? 170
 For Protestant religion vow,
 That did that vowing disallow ?
 For Privilege of Parliament,
 In which that swearing made a rent ?
 And since, of all the three, not one 175
 Is left in being, 'tis well known.
 Did they not swear, in express words,
 To prop and back the House of Lords ;
 And after turn'd out the whole houseful
 Of Peers, as dang'rous and unuseful ? 180
 So Cromwell, with deep oaths and vows,
 Swore all the Commons out o' th' House ;
 Vow'd that the Redcoats would disband,

Ay, marry would they, at their command ;
 And troll'd them on, and swore, and swore, 185
 Till th' Army turn'd them out of door.

This tells us plainly what they thought,
 That oaths and swearing go for nought,
 And that by them th' were only meant
 To serve for an expedient. 190

What was the Public Faith found out for,
 But to slur men of what they fought for ?
 The Public Faith, which ev'ry one
 Is bound t' observe, yet kept by none ;
 And if that go for nothing, why 195
 Should Private Faith have such a tie ?

Oaths were not purpos'd, more than law,
 To keep the Good and Just in awe,
 But to confine the Bad and Sinful,
 Like mortal cattle in a pinfold. 200

A Saint 's of th' heav'nly realm a Peer ;
 And as no Peer is bound to swear,
 But on the Gospel of his Honour,
 Of which he may dispose, as owner,
 It follows, though the thing be forg'ry 205

And false, t' affirm it is no perj'ry,
 But a mere ceremony, and a breach
 Of nothing but a form of speech,
 And goes for no more when 'tis took
 Than mere saluting of the Book. 210

Suppose the Scriptures are of force,
 They're but commissions of course ;
 And Saints have freedom to digress,
 And vary from 'em, as they please ;
 Or misinterpret them by private 215
 Instructions, to all aims they drive at.
 Then why should we ourselves abridge,

And curtail our own privilege?
 Quakers (that, like to lanterns, bear
 Their light within 'em) will not swear; 220
 Their Gospel is an Accidence,
 By which they construe Conscience,
 And hold no sin so deeply red,
 As that of breaking Priscian's head
 (The head and founder of their order, 225
 That stirring hats held worse than murder).
 These, thinking they're obliged to troth
 In swearing, will not take an oath:
 Like mules, who if they've not their will
 To keep their own pace stand stock still: 230
 But they are weak, and little know
 What free-born Consciences may do.
 'Tis the temptation of the devil
 That makes all human actions evil:
 For Saints may do the same things by 235
 The Spirit, in sincerity,
 Which other men are tempted to,
 And at the devil's instance do;
 And yet the actions be contrary,
 Just as the Saints and Wicked vary. 240
 For, as on land there is no beast
 But in some fish at sea 's exprest,
 So in the Wicked there's no vice
 Of which the Saints have not a spice;
 And yet that thing that's pious in 245
 The one, in th' other is a sin.
 Is't not ridiculous and nonsense
 A saint should be a slave to Conscience;
 That ought to be above such fancies,
 As far as above Ordinances? 250
 She's of the wicked, as I guess

B' her looks, her language, and her dress :
 And though like constables we search
 For false wares one another's Church ;
 Yet all of us hold this for true, 255
 No faith is to the Wicked due.
 For truth is precious and divine ;
 Too rich a pearl for carnal swine.
 Quoth Hudibras, All this is true :
 Yet 'tis not fit that all men knew 260
 Those mysteries and revelations ;
 And therefore topical evasions
 Of subtle turns and shifts of sense,
 Serve best with th' Wicked for pretence :
 Such as the learned Jesuits use, 265
 And Presbyterians, for excuse
 Against the Protestants, when th' happen
 To find their Churches taken napping.
 As thus : A breach of Oath is duple,
 And either way admits a scruple, 270
 And may be *ex parte* of the maker
 More criminal, than the injur'd taker ;
 For he that strains too far a vow
 Will break it, like an o'erbent bow :
 And he that made, and forc'd it, broke it ; 275
 Not he that for Convenience took it.
 A broken oath is, *quatenus* oath,
 As sound t' all purposes of troth ;
 As broken laws are ne'er the worse :
 Nay, till they're broken have no force. 280
 What's justice to a man, or laws,
 That never comes within their claws ?
 They have no pow'r but to admonish ;
 Cannot control, coerce, or punish,
 Until they're broken, and then touch 285

Those only that do make 'em such.
 Beside, no engagement is allow'd
 By men in prison made for good ;
 For when they're set at liberty
 They're from th' engagement too set free. 290
 The Rabbins write, When any Jew
 Did make to God or man a vow
 Which afterwards he found untoward
 And stubborn to be kept, or too hard,
 Any three other Jews o' th' nation 295
 Might free him from the obligation :
 And have not two Saints pow'r to use
 A greater privilege than three Jews ?
 The court of Conscience, which in man
 Should be supreme and soveran, 300
 Is 't fit should be subordinate
 To ev'ry petty court i' th' state,
 And have less power than the lesser,
 To deal with perjury at pleasure ?
 Have its proceedings disallow'd, or 305
 Allow'd, at fancy of pie-powder ?
 Tell all it does, or does not know,
 For swearing *ex officio* ?
 Be forc'd t' impeach a broken hedge,
 And pigs unring'd, at *vis. franc.* pledge ? 310
 Discover thieves, and bawds, recusants,
 Priests, witches, eaves-droppers, and nuisance ?
 Tell who did play at games unlawful,
 And who fill'd pots of ale but half-full ?
 And have no pow'r at all, nor shift, 315
 To help itself at a dead lift ?
 Why should not Conscience have vacation
 As well as other Courts o' th' nation ;
 Have equal power to adjourn,

Appoint appearance and return ; 320
 And make as nice distinction serve
 To split a case, as those that carve,
 Invoking cuckolds' names, hit joints ?
 Why should not tricks as slight do points ?
 Is not th' High-court of Justice sworn 325
 To just that law that serves their turn ?
 Make their own jealousies high treason,
 And fix 'em whomsoe'er they please on ?
 Cannot the learned Counsel there
 Make laws in any shape appear ? 330
 Mould 'em as witches do their clay,
 When they make pictures to destroy ;
 And vex 'em into any form
 That fits their purpose to do harm ?
 Rack 'em until they do confess, 335
 Impeach of treason whom they please,
 And most perfidiously condemn
 Those that engage their lives for them ;
 And yet do nothing in their own sense,
 But what they ought by Oath and Conscience ?
 Can they not juggle, and with slight
 Conveyance play with wrong and right ;
 And sell their blasts of wind as dear,
 As Lapland witches bottled air ?
 Will not Fear, Favour, Bribe, and Grudge, 345
 The same case sev'ral ways adjudge ;
 As seamen with the self-same gale,
 Will several diff'rent courses sail ?
 As when the sea breaks o'er its bounds,
 And overflows the level grounds, 350
 Those banks and dams, that, like a screen,

Did keep it out, now keep it in ;
 So, when tyrannical usurpation
 Invades the freedom of a nation,
 The laws o' th' land, that were intended 355
 To keep it out, are made defend it.
 Does not in Chanc'ry ev'ry man swear
 What makes best for him in his answer ?
 Is not the winding up witnesses,
 And nicking, more than half the bus'ness ? 360
 For witnesses, like watches, go
 Just as they're set, too fast or slow ;
 And, where in Conscience they're strait-lac'd,
 'Tis ten to one that side is cast.
 Do not your Juries give their verdict 365
 As if they felt the cause, not heard it ?
 And, as they please, make matter o' fact
 Run all on one side as they're packt ?
 Nature has made man's breast no windores,
 To publish what he does within dores ; 370
 Nor what dark secrets there inhabit,
 Unless his own rash folly blab it.
 If Oaths can do a man no good
 In his own bus'ness, why they should,
 In other matters, do him hurt ; 375
 I think there's little reason for 't.
 He that imposes an Oath, makes it ;
 Not he that for Convenience takes it :
 Then how can any man be said
 To break an Oath he never made ? 380
 These reasons may perhaps look oddly
 To th' Wicked, though they evince the Godly ;
 But if they will not serve to clear

My Honour, I am ne'er the near.
 Honour is like that glassy bubble 385
 That finds philosophers such trouble,
 Whose least part crackt, the whole does fly,
 And wits are crackt to find out why.

Quoth Ralpho, Honour's but a word
 To swear by only in a Lord : 390
 In other men 'tis but a huff
 To vapour with, instead of proof ;
 That, like a wen, looks big and swells,
 Is senseless, and just nothing else.
 Let it (quoth he) be what it will, 395
 It has the world's opinion still.

But as men are not wise that run
 The slightest hazard they may shun,
 There may a medium be found out
 To clear to all the world the doubt ; 400
 And that is, if a man may do 't,
 By proxy whipt, or substitute.

Though nice and dark the point appear
 (Quoth Ralph), it may hold up and clear.
 That Sinners may supply the place 405
 Of suff'ring Saints, is a plain case.
 Justice gives sentence many times
 On one man for another's crimes.
 Our Brethren of New England use
 Choice Malefactors to excuse, 410
 And hand the Guiltless in their stead,
 Of whom the Churches have less need ;
 As lately 't happen'd : In a town
 There liv'd a Cobbler, and but one,
 That out of Doctrine could cut Use, 415
 And mend men's lives as well as shoes.
 This precious Brother having slain

In times of peace an Indian,
 Not out of malice, but mere zeal
 (Because he was an Infidel), 420
 The mighty Tottipottymoy
 Sent to our Elders an Envoy,
 Complaining sorely of the breach
 Of league, held forth by Brother Patch,
 Against the articles in force 425
 Between both Churches, his and ours ;
 For which he crav'd the Saints to render
 Into his hands, or hang, th' offender.
 But they, maturely having weigh'd
 They had no more but him o' th' trade 430
 (A man that serv'd them in a double
 Capacity, to teach and cobble),
 Resolv'd to spare him ; yet, to do
 The Indian Hoghan Moghan too
 Impartial justice, in his stead did 435
 Hang an old Weaver that was bed-rid.
 Then wherefore may not you be skipp'd,
 And in your room another whipp'd ?
 For all philosophers, but the Sceptic,
 Hold whipping may be sympathetic. 440

It is enough, quoth Hudibras,
 Thou hast resolv'd and clear'd the case ;
 And canst, in Conscience, not refuse
 From thy own Doctrine to raise Use :
 I know thou wilt not (for my sake) 445
 Be tender-conscienc'd of thy back :
 Then strip thee of thy carnal jerkin,
 And give thy outward-fellow a ferking ;
 For when thy vessel is new hoop'd,
 All leaks of sinning will be stopp'd. 450

Quoth Ralpho, You mistake the matter ;

For in all scruples of this nature
 No man includes himself, nor turns
 The point upon his own concerns.
 As no man of his own self catches 455
 The itch or amorous French aches ;
 So no man does himself convince,
 By his own doctrine, of his sins :
 And though all cry down self, none means
 His own self in a literal sense. 460
 Besides, it is not only foppish,
 But vile, idolatrous, and Popish,
 For one man out of his own skin
 To firk and whip another's sin ;
 As pedants out of schoolboys' breeches 465
 Do claw and curry their own itches.
 But in this case it is profane,
 And sinful too, because in vain ;
 For we must take our oaths upon it
 You did the deed, when I have done it. 470
 Quoth Hudibras, That's answer'd soon ;
 Give us the whip, we'll lay it on.
 Quoth Ralpho, That we may swear true,
 'Twere properer that I whipp'd you ;
 For when with your consent 'tis done, 475
 The act is really your own.
 Quoth Hudibras, It is in vain
 (I see) to argue 'gainst the grain ;
 Or, like the stars, incline men to
 What they 're averse themselves to do : 480
 For when disputes are weary'd out,
 'Tis int'rest still resolves the doubt.
 But since no reason can confute ye,
 I'll try to force you to your duty ;
 For so it is, howe'er you mince it, 485

As, ere we part, I shall evince it ;
 And curry (if you stand out), whether
 You will or no, your stubborn leather.
 Canst thou refuse to bear thy part
 I' th' public Work, base as thou art ? 490
 To higgle thus for a few blows,
 To gain thy Knight an op'lent spouse,
 Whose wealth his bowels yearn to purchase
 Merely for th' int'rest of the Churches ?
 And when he has it in his claws 495
 Will not be hide-bound to the Cause ;
 Nor shalt thou find him a curmudgin
 If thou dispatch it without grudging :
 If not, resolve, before we go,
 That you and I must pull a crow. 500

Y' had best (quoth Ralpho), as the Ancients
 Say wisely, Have a care o' th' main chance,
 And Look before you ere you leap ;
 For As you sow, y' are like to reap :
 And were y' as good as George-a-Green, 505
 I should make bold to turn agen ;
 Nor am I doubtful of the issue
 In a just quarrel, and mine is so.
 Is 't fitting for a man of honour
 To whip the Saints, like Bishop Bonner ? 510
 A Knight t' usurp the Beadle's office,
 For which y' are like to raise brave trophies ?
 But I advise you (not for fear,
 But for your own sake) to forbear ;
 And for the Churches, which may chance 515
 From hence to spring a variance,
 And raise among themselves new scruples,
 Whom common danger hardly couples.
 Remember how in arms and politics

We still have worsted all your holy tricks ; 520
 Trepann'd your party with intrigue,
 And took your Grandees down a peg ;
 New-modell'd th' army, and cashier'd
 All that to Legion Smec adher'd ;
 Made a mere utensil o' your Church, 525
 And after left it in the lurch,
 A scaffold to build up our own,
 And when w' had done with 't pull'd it down ;
 Capoch'd your Rabbins of the Synod,
 And snapp'd their Canons with a Why-not 530
 (Grave Synod-men, that were rever'd
 For solid face and depth of beard) ;
 Their Classic model prov'd a maggot,
 Their Direct'ry an Indian pagod ;
 And drown'd their Discipline like a kitten, 535
 On which th' had been so long a-sitting ;
 Decry'd it as a holy cheat
 Grown out of date and obsolete,
 And all the Saints of the first grass
 As castling foals of Balaam's ass. 540

At this the Knight grew high in chafe,
 And, staring furiously on Ralph,
 He trembled and look'd pale with ire,
 Like ashes first, then red as fire.
 Have I (quoth he) been ta'en in fight, 545
 And for so many moons lain by 't,
 And when all other means did fail
 Have been exchang'd for tubs of ale
 (Not but they thought me worth a ransom
 Much more consid'able and handsome, 550

529 VAR. 'O'er-reach'd.' 'Capoch'd' signifies hooded, or blindfolded.

But for their own sakes, and for fear
 They were not safe when I was there),
 Now to be baffled by a scoundrel,
 An upstart Sect'ry and a Mongrel,
 Such as breed out of peccant humours 555
 Of our own Church, like wens or tumours,
 And, like a maggot in a sore,
 Would that which gave it life devour?
 It never shall be done or said.
 With that he seiz'd upon his blade; 560
 And Ralpho too, as quick and bold,
 Upon his basket-hilt laid hold
 With equal readiness, prepar'd
 To draw and stand upon his guard:
 When both were parted on the sudden 565
 With hideous clamour and a loud one,
 As if all sorts of noise had been
 Contracted into one loud din;
 Or that some member to be chosen
 Had got the odds above a thousand, 570
 And by the greatness of his noise
 Prov'd fittest for his country's choice.
 This strange surprisal put the Knight
 And wrathful Squire into a fright;
 And though they stood prepar'd, with fatal 575
 Impetuous rancour, to join battle,
 Both thought it was the wisest course
 To wave the fight and mount to horse,
 And to secure by swift retreating
 Themselves from danger of worse beating: 580
 Yet neither of them would disparage,
 By utt'ring of his mind, his courage,
 Which made them stoutly keep their ground,
 With horror and disdain wind-bound.

And now the cause of all their fear 585
 By slow degrees approach'd so near
 They might distinguish diff'rent noise
 Of horns, and pans, and dogs, and boys,
 And kettle-drums, whose sullen dub
 Sounds like the hooping of a tub. 590
 But when the sight appear'd in view,
 They found it was an antique shew ;
 A triumph that for pomp and state
 Did proudest Roman's emulate.
 For as the Aldermen of Rome, 595
 Their foes at training overcome
 (And not enlarging territory,
 As some mistaken write in story),
 Being mounted in their best array
 Upon a car—and who but they?— 600
 And follow'd with a world of tall lads
 That merry ditties troll'd and ballads,
 Did ride with many a Good-morrow,
 Crying, Hey for our town ! through the Borough ;
 So when this triumph drew so nigh 605
 They might particulars descry,
 They never saw two things so pat
 In all respects as this and that.
 First, he that led the cavalcate
 Wore a sow-gelder's flagellate, 610
 On which he blew as strong a levet
 As well-feed lawyer on his brev'ate
 When over one another's heads
 They charge (three ranks at once) like Sweads.

587 VAR. 'They might discern respective noise.'

596 VAR. 'For foes.'

609 610 VAR. 'cavalcade,' 'flagellet.'

614 VAR. 'Swedes.'

Next pans and kettles of all keys, 615
 From trebles down to double base ;
 And after them, upon a nag
 That might pass for a forehand stag,
 A cornet rode, and on his staff
 A smock display'd did proudly wave : 620
 Then bagpipes of the loudest drones
 With snuffling broken-winded tones,
 Whose blasts of air, in pockets shut,
 Sound filthier than from the gut,
 And make a viler noise than swine 625
 In windy weather when they whine.
 Next one upon a pair of panniers,
 Full fraught with that which for good manners
 Shall here be nameless, mix'd with grains,
 Which he dispens'd among the swains, 630
 And busily upon the crowd
 At random round about bestow'd.
 Then, mounted on a horned horse,
 One bore a gauntlet and gilt spurs,
 Ty'd to the pummel of a long sword 635
 He held revers'd, the point turn'd downward.
 Next after, on a raw-bon'd steed,
 The conqu'ror's Standard-bearer rid,
 And bore aloft before the champion
 A petticoat display'd, and rampant ; 640
 Near whom the Amazon triumphant
 Bestrid her beast, and on the rump on't
 Sat, face to tail and bum to bum,
 The warrior whilom overcome;
 Arm'd with a spindle and a distaff, 645
 Which as he rode she made him twist off ;
 And when he loiter'd, o'er her shoulder
 Chastis'd the reformado soldier.

Before the Dame and round about
 March'd whifflers and staffers on foot, 650
 With lacquies, grooms, valets, and pages,
 In fit and proper equipages ;
 Of whom some torches bore, some links,
 Before the proud virago minx,
 That was both Madam and a Don ; 655
 Like Nero's Sporus or Pope Joan ;
 And at fit periods the whole rout
 Set up their throats with clam'rous shout.
 The Knight transported, and the Squire,
 Put up their weapons and their ire ; 660
 And Hudibras, who us'd to ponder
 On such sights with judicious wonder,
 Could hold no longer to impart
 His an'madversions, for his heart.

Quoth he, In all my life till now 665
 I ne'er saw so profane a show :
 It is a Paganish invention
 Which Heathen writers often mention ;
 And he who made it had read Goodwin,
 Or Ross, or Cælius Rhodogine, 670
 With all the Grecian Speeds and Stows
 That best describe those ancient shows,
 And has observ'd all fit decorums
 We find describ'd by old historians.
 For as the Roman conqueror 675
 That put an end to foreign war,
 Ent'ring the town in triumph for it,
 Bore a slave with him in his chariot ;
 So this insulting female brave
 Carries behind her here a slave : 680
 And as the Ancients long ago,
 When they in field defy'd the foe,

Hung out their mantles *della guerre*,
 So her proud Standard-bearer here
 Waves on his spear, in dreadful manner, 685
 A Tyrian petticoat for banner.

Next links and torches, heretofore
 Still borne before the emperor :
 And, as in antique triumph eggs
 Were borne for mystical intrigues, 690
 There 's one in truncheon, like a ladle,
 That carries eggs too, fresh or addle ;
 And still at random as he goes
 Among the rabble-rout bestows.

Quoth Ralpho, You mistake the matter ; 695
 For all th' antiquity you smatter
 Is but a riding us'd of course
 When The grey mare 's the better horse ;
 When o'er the breeches greedy women
 Fight to extend their vast dominion, 700
 And in the cause impatient Grizel
 Has drubb'd her husband with bull's pizzle,
 And brought him under Covert-baron,
 To turn her vassal with a murrain ;
 When wives their sexes shift, like hares, 705
 And ride their husbands, like night-mares,
 And they in mortal battle vanquish'd
 Are of their charter disenfranchis'd,
 And by the right of war, like gills,
 Condemn'd to distaff, horns, and wheels : 710
 For when men by their wives are cow'd,
 Their horns of course are understood.

Quoth Hudibras, Thou still giv'st sentence
 Impertinently, and against sense :
 'Tis not the least disparagement 715
 To be defeated by th' event,

Nor to be beaten by main force ;
That does not make a man the worse,
Although his shoulders with battoon
Be claw'd and cudgel'd to some tune. 720
A tailor's prentice has no hard
Measure that's bang'd with a true yard ;
But to turn tail or run away,
And without blows give up the day,
Or to surrender ere th' assault, 725
That 's no man's fortune, but his fault ;
And renders men of honour less
Than all th' adversity of success :
And only unto such this shew
Of horns and petticoats is due. 730
There is a lesser profanation,
Like that the Romans call'd Ovation :
For as ovation was allow'd
For conquest purchas'd without blood,
So men decree those lesser shows 735
For vict'ry gotten without blows,
By dint of sharp hard words, which some
Give battle with and overcome :
These mounted in a chair-curule,
Which Moderns call a Cuckling-stool, 740
March proudly to the river side,
And o'er the waves in triumph ride ;
Like dukes of Venice, who are sed
The Adriatic sea to wed,
And have a gentler wife than those 745
For whom the state decrees those shows.
But both are Heathenish, and come
From th' Whores of Babylon and Rome,
And by the Saints should be withstood,
As antichristian and lewd ; 750

And we as such should now contribute
Our utmost strugglings to prohibit.

This said, they both advanc'd, and rode
A dog-trot through the bawling crowd
T' attack the leader, and still prest 755
Till they approach'd him breast to breast.
Then Hudibras with face and hand
Made signs for silence ; which obtain'd :
What means (quoth he) this devil's procession
With men of orthodox profession ? 760
'Tis ethnique and idolatrous,
From Heathenism deriv'd to us.
Does not the Whore of Bab'lon ride
Upon her horned Beast astride
Like this proud Dame, who either is 765
A type of her, or she of this ?
Are things of superstitious function
Fit to be us'd in Gospel sunshine ?
It is an antichristian opera,
Much us'd in midnight times of Popery ; 770
Of running after self-inventions
Of wicked and profane intentions ;
To scandalize that sex for scolding,
To whom the Saints are so beholden.
Women, who were our first apostles, 775
Without whose aid we 'ad all been lost else ;

⁷⁷⁵ The women were zealous contributors to the Good Cause, as they called it. Mr. James Howel observes, " That unusual voluntary collections were made both in town and country ; the seamstress brought in her silver thimble, the chambermaid her bodkin, the cook her silver spoon, into the common treasury of war.—And some sort of females were freer in their contributions, so far as to part with their rings and earrings, as if some golden calf were to be molten and set up to be idolized."

Women, that left no stone unturn'd
 In which the Cause might be concern'd ;
 Brought in their children's spoons and whistles
 To purchase swords, carbines, and pistols ; 780
 Their husbands' cullies and sweethearts,
 To take the Saints' and Churches' parts ;
 Drew several Gifted Brethren in,
 That for the Bishops would have been,
 And fix'd 'em constant to the party 785
 With motives powerful and hearty ;
 Their husbands robb'd, and made hard shifts
 T' administer unto their Gifts
 All they could rap, and rend, and pilfer,
 To scraps and ends of gold and silver ; 790
 Rubb'd down the Teachers, tir'd and spent
 With holding forth for Parl'ament ;
 Pamper'd and edify'd their zeal
 With marrow puddings many a meal ;
 Enabled them, with store of meat, 795
 On controverted points to eat ;
 And cramm'd 'em till their guts did ake
 With caudle, custard, and plum-cake.
 What have they done or what left undone
 That might advance the Cause at London ? 800
 March'd rank and file with drum and ensign,
 T' intrench the City for defence in ;
 Rais'd rampiers with their own soft hands,
 To put the Enemy to stands :
 From ladies down to oyster wenches 805
 Labour'd like pioneers in trenches,
 Fall'n to their pickaxes and tools,
 And help'd the men to dig like moles.

Have not the handmaids of the City
 Chose of their Members a Committee, 810
 For raising of a common purse,
 Out of their wages, to raise horse ?
 And do they not as triers sit,
 To judge what officers are fit ?
 Have they—At that an egg let fly 815
 Hit him directly o'er the eye,
 And, running down his cheek, besmear'd
 With orange-tawny slime his beard ;
 But beard and slime being of one hue,
 The wound the less appear'd in view. 820
 Then he that on the panniers rode
 Let fly on th' other side a load,
 And, quickly charg'd again, gave fully
 In Ralpho's face another volley.
 The Knight was startled with the smell, 825
 And for his sword began to feel ;
 And Ralpho, smother'd with the stink,
 Grasp'd his, when one that bore a link
 O' th' sudden clapp'd his flaming cudgel,
 Like linstock, to the horse's touch-hole ; 830
 And straight another with his flambeau
 Gave Ralpho o'er the eyes a damn'd blow.
 The beasts began to kick and fling,
 And forc'd the rout to make a ring ;

813 814 “ The House considered, in the next place, that
 divers weak persons have crept into places beyond their
 abilities ; and, to the end that men of greater parts may be
 put into their rooms, they appointed the Lady Middlesex,
 Mrs. Dunch, the Lady Foster, and the Lady Anne Waller,
 by reason of their great experience in soldiery in the king-
 dom, to be a Committee of Triers for the business.” See
 “ The Parliament of Ladies,” p. 6.

Through which they quickly broke their way, 835
 And brought them off from further fray.

And though disorder'd in retreat,
 Each of them stoutly kept his seat :
 For quitting both their swords and reins,
 They grasp'd with all their strength the manes,
 And, to avoid the foe's pursuit,
 With spurring put their cattle to 't ;
 And till all four were out of wind,
 And danger too, ne'er look'd behind.

After they 'ad paus'd a while, supplying 845
 Their spirits spent with fight and flying,
 And Hudibras recruited force
 Of lungs for action or discourse :

Quoth he, That man is sure to lose
 That fouls his hands with dirty foes : 850
 For where no honour 's to be gain'd,
 'Tis thrown away in being maintain'd.

'Twas ill for us we had to do
 With so dishon'rabl a foe :
 For though the law of arms doth bar 855

The use of venom'd shot in war,
 Yet by the nauseous smell and noisom
 Their case-shot savour strong of poison,
 And doubtless have been chew'd with teeth
 Of some that had a stinking breath ; 860

Else when we put it to the push,
 They had not giv'n us such a brush.
 But as those pultrons that fling dirt
 Do but defile but cannot hurt ;
 So all the honour they have won, 865
 Or we have lost, is much at one.

Twas well we made so resolute
 A brave retreat without pursuit,
 For if we had not we had sped
 Much worse, to be in triumph led ; 870
 Than which the ancients held no state
 Of man's life more unfortunate.
 But if this bold adventure e'er
 Do chance to reach the widow's ear,
 It may, being destin'd to assert 875
 Her sex's honour, reach her heart :
 And as such homely treats (they say)
 Portend good fortune, so this may.
 Vespasian being daub'd with dirt
 Was destin'd to the empire for 't ; 880
 And from a scavenger did come
 To be a mighty prince in Rome :
 And why may not this foul address
 Presage in love the same success ?
 Then let us straight, to cleanse our wounds, 885
 Advance in quest of nearest ponds ;
 And after (as we first design'd)
 Swear I've perform'd what she enjoin'd.

⁶⁶⁸ VAR. 'T' avoid pursuit.'

PART II. CANTO III.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Knight, with various doubts possest,
 To win the Lady goes in quest
 Of Sidrophel the Rosycrucian,
 To know the Dest'nies' resolution :
 With whom b'ing met, they both chop logic
 About the science astrologic ;
 Till, falling from dispute to fight,
 The Conj'rer's worsted by the Knight.

DOUBTLESS the pleasure is as great
 Of being cheated, as to cheat ;
 As lookers-on feel most delight
 That least perceive a juggler's sleight,
 And still, the less they understand, 5
 The more they' admire his sleight of hand.

Some with a noise and greasy light
 Are'snapt, as men catch larks by night,
 Ensnar'd and hamper'd by the soul,
 As nooses by the legs catch fowl. 10
 Some with a med'cine and receipt
 Are drawn to nibble at the bait ;
 And though it be a two-foot trout,
 'Tis with a single hair pull'd out.

Others believe no voice t' an organ 15
 So sweet as lawyer's in his bar-gown,
 Until with subtle cobweb-cheats
 They're catch'd in knotted law like nets :
 In which, when once they are imbrangled,

The more they stir the more they're tangled ; 20
 And while their purses can dispute,
 There's no end of th' immortal suit.

Others still gape t' anticipate
 The cabinet-designs of Fate,
 Apply to wizards to foresee 25
 What shall and what shall never be ;
 And, as those vultures do forebode,
 Believe events prove bad or good :
 A flam more senseless than the roguery
 Of old aurspicy and aug'ry, 30
 That out of garbages of cattle
 Presag'd th' events of truce or battle ;
 From flight of birds, or chickens' pecking,
 Success of great'st attempts would reckon :
 Though cheats, yet more intelligible 35
 Than those that with the stars do fribble.
 This Hudibras by proof found true,
 As in due time and place we'll shew :
 For he, with beard and face made clean,
 Being mounted on his steed agen, 40
 (And Ralpho got a-cock-horse too
 Upon his beast, with much ado),
 Advanc'd on for the Widow's house,
 T' acquit himself and pay his vows :
 When various thoughts began to bustle, 45
 And with his inward man to justle.
 He thought what danger might accrue,
 If she should find he swore untrue ;
 Or if his Squire or he should fail,
 And not be punctual in their tale, 50
 It might at once the ruin prove

Both of his honour, faith, and love.
 But if he should forbear to go,
 She might conclude he 'ad broke his vow ;
 And that he durst not now for shame 55
 Appear in court to try his claim :
 This was the penn'worth of his thought,
 To pass time, and uneasy trot.
 Quoth he, In all my past adventures
 I ne'er was set so on the tenters, 60
 Or taken tardy with dilemma
 That ev'ry way I turn does hem me,
 And with inextricable doubt
 Besets my puzzled wits about :
 For though the Dame has been my bail, 65
 To free me from enchanted jail,
 Yet as a dog, committed close
 For some offence, by chance breaks loose,
 And quits his clog ; but all in vain,
 He still draws after him his chain : 70
 So, though my ankle she has quitted,
 My heart continues still committed ;
 And, like a bail'd and mainpriz'd lover,
 Although at large, I am bound over ;
 And when I shall appear in court 75
 To plead my cause and answer for 't,
 Unless the judge do partial prove,
 What will become of me and love ?
 For, if in our account we vary,
 Or but in circumstance miscarry ; 80
 Or if she put me to strict proof,
 And make me pull my doublet off
 To shew, by evident record
 Writ on my skin, I've kept my word,
 How can I e'er expect to have her, 85

Having demurr'd unto her favour?
 But, faith and love and honour lost,
 Shall be reduc'd t' a Knight o' th' Post?
 Beside, that stripping may prevent
 What I'm to prove by argument, 90
 And justify I have a tail,
 And that way too my proof may fail.
 Oh, that I could enucleate,
 And solve the problems of my fate!
 Or find by necromantic art 95
 How far the Dest'nies take my part!
 For if I were not more than certain
 To win and wear her and her fortune,
 I'd go no farther in this courtship,
 To hazard soul, estate, and Worship: 100
 For though an oath obliges not
 Where any thing is to be got
 (As thou hast prov'd), yet 'tis profane
 And sinful when men swear in vain.

Quoth Ralph, Not far from hence doth dwell
 A cunning man, hight Sidrophel,
 That deals in Destiny's dark counsels,
 And sage opinions of the Moon sells;
 To whom all people, far and near,
 On deep importances repair: 110
 When brass and pewter hap to stray,
 And linen slinks out o' the way;
 When geese and pullen are seduc'd,
 And sows of sucking pigs are chous'd;
 When cattle feel indisposition, 115

¹⁰⁶ William Lilly, the famous astrologer of those times, who in his yearly almanacks foretold victories for the Parliament with as much certainty as the preachers did in their sermons.

And need th' opinion of physician ;
 When murrain reigns in hogs or sheep,
 And chickens languish of the pip ;
 When yest and outward means do fail,
 And have no pow'r to work on ale ; 120
 When butter does refuse to come,
 And love proves cross and humoursome ;
 To him with questions, and with urine,
 They for discov'ry flock, or curing.

Quoth Hudibras, This Sidrophel 125
 I've heard of, and should like it well,
 If thou canst prove the Saints have freedom
 To go to sorc'ers when they need 'em.

Says Ralpho, There 's no doubt of that ;
 Those principles I quoted late 130
 Prove that the Godly may allege
 For any thing their privilege,
 And to the dev'l himself may go
 If they have motives thereunto :
 For, as there is a war between 135
 The dev'l and them, it is no sin
 If they by subtle stratagem
 Make use of him, as he does them.

Has not this present Parl'ament
 A ledger to the devil sent, 140
 Fully empower'd to treat about
 Finding revolted witches out ?
 And has not he, within a year,
 Hang'd threescore of 'em in one shire ?
 Some only for not being drown'd, 145
 And some for sitting above ground,
 Whole days and nights, upon their breeches,
 And feeling pain, were hang'd for witches ;
 And some for putting knavish tricks

Upon green geese and turkey-chicks, 150
 Or pigs that suddenly deceast
 Of griefs unnat'ral, as he guest ;
 Who after prov'd himself a witch,
 And made a rod for his own breech.
 Did not the dev'l appear to Martin 155
 Luther in Germany, for certain ?
 And would have gull'd him with a trick,
 But Mart. was too, too politic.
 Did he not help the Dutch to purge,
 At Antwerp, their cathedral church ? 160
 Sing catches to the Saints at Mascon,
 And tell them all they came to ask him ?
 Appear in divers shapes to Kelly,
 And speak i' th' Nun of Loudon's belly ?
 Meet with the Parl'ment's Committee, 165
 At Woodstock, on a pers'nal treaty ?
 At Sarum take a cavalier,
 I' th' Cause's service, prisoner ?
 As Withers in immortal rhyme
 Has register'd to aftertime. 170
 Do not our great Reformers use
 This Sidrophel to forebode news ;
 To write of victories next year,
 And castles taken, yet i' th' air ?
 Of battles fought at sea, and ships 175
 Sunk two years hence the last eclipse ?
 A total o'erthrow giv'n the King
 In Cornwall, horse and foot, next Spring ?
 And has not he point-blank foretold
 Whats'e'er the Close Committee would ? 180

169 This Withers was a Puritanical officer in the Parliament army, and a great pretender to poetry, as appears from his poems enumerated by A. Wood.

Made Mars and Saturn for the Cause ?
 The Moon for fundamental laws ?
 The Ram, the Bull, and Goat, declare
 Against the Book of Common Pray'r ?
 The Scorpion take the Protestation, 185
 And Bear engage for Reformation ?
 Made all the Royal stars recant,
 Compound, and take the Covenant ?
 Quoth Hudibras, The case is clear.
 The Saints may 'mplot a conjurer, 190
 As thou hast prov'd it by their practice :
 No argument like matter of fact is ;
 And we are best of all led to
 Men's principles by what they do.
 Then let us straight advance in quest 195
 Of this profound gymnosophist,
 And, as the Fates and he advise,
 Pursue or wave this enterprise.
 This said, he turn'd about his steed,
 And eftsoons on th' adventure rid ; 200
 Where leave we him and Ralph a while,
 And to the conj'rer turn our style,
 To let our reader understand
 What's useful of him beforehand.
 He had been long t'wards mathematics, 205
 Optics, philosophy, and statics,
 Magic, horoscopy, astrology,
 And was old dog at physiology ;
 But as a dog that turns the spit
 Bestirs himself, and plies his feet 210
 To climb the wheel, but all in vain,
 His own weight brings him down again,
 And still he's in the self-same place
 Where at his setting out he was ;

So in the circle of the arts 215
 Did he advance his nat'ral parts,
 Till falling back still, for retreat,
 He fell to juggle, cant, and cheat.
 For as those fowls that live in water
 Are never wet, he did but smatter ; 220
 Whate'er he labour'd to appear,
 His understanding still was clear ;
 Yet none a deeper knowledge boasted,
 Since old Hodge Bacon, and Bob Grosted.
 Th' intelligible world he knew, 225
 And all men dream on't to be true,
 That in this world there's not a wart
 That has not there a counterpart ;
 Nor can there on the face of ground
 An individual beard be found 230
 That has not in that foreign nation
 A fellow of the self-same fashion ;
 So cut, so colour'd, and so curl'd,
 As those are in th' inferior world.

²²⁴ Roger Bacon, commonly called 'Friar Bacon,' lived in the reign of our Edward I. and, for some little skill he had in the mathematics, was by the rabble accounted a conjurer, and had the sottish story of the Brazen Head fathered upon him by the ignorant Monks of those days.

Ib. Bishop Grosted was Bishop of Lincoln, 20th Henry III. A. D. 1235. "He was suspected by the clergy to be a conjurer ; for which crime he was deprived by Pope Innocent IV. and summoned to appear at Rome." But this is a mistake ; for the Pope's antipathy to him was occasioned by his frankly expostulating with him (both personally and by letter) on his encroachments upon the English church and monarchy. He was persecuted by Pope Innocent, but it is not certain that he was deprived, though Bale thinks he was.

He 'ad read Dee's prefaces before 235
 The Dev'l, and Euclid, o'er and o'er ;
 And all th' intrigues 'twixt him and Kelly,
 Lascus and th' Emperor, would tell ye :
 But with the moon was more familiar
 Than e'er was almanack well-willer ; 240
 Her secrets understood so clear ;
 That some believ'd he had been there ;
 Knew when she was in fittest mood
 For cutting corns or letting blood ;
 When for anointing scabs or itches, 245
 Or to the bum applying leeches ;
 When sows and bitches may be spay'd,
 And in what sign best cyder 's made ;
 Whether the wane be, or increase,
 Best to set garlic or sow pease ; 250
 Who first found out the man i' th' moon,
 That to the Ancients was unknown ;
 How many Dukes, and Earls, and Peers,
 Are in the planetary spheres ;
 Their airy empire, and command ; 255
 Their sev'ral strengths by sea and land ;
 What factions they 've, and what they drive at
 In public vogue, or what in private ;
 With what designs and interests
 Each party manages contests. 260
 He made an instrument to know
 If the moon shine at full or no ;
 That would, as soon as e'er she shone, straight

²³⁵ Dee was a Welshman, and educated at Oxford, where he commenced Doctor, and afterwards travelled into foreign parts in quest of chemistry, &c.

²³⁸ Albertus Lascus, Lasky, or Alasco, Prince Palatine of Poland, concerned with Dee and Kelly.

Whether 'twere day or night demonstrate ;
 Tell what her d'iameter to an inch is, 265
 And prove that she's not made of green cheese.
 It would demonstrate that the man in
 The moon's a sea Mediterranean ;
 And that it is no dog nor bitch
 That stands behind him at his breech, 270
 But a huge Caspian sea or lake,
 With arms, which men for legs mistake ;
 How large a gulf his tail composes,
 And what a goodly bay his nose is ;
 How many German leagues by th' scale 275
 Cape Snout 's from Promontory Tail.
 He made a planetary gin,
 Which rats would run their own heads in,
 And come on purpose to be taken,
 Without th' expense of cheese or bacon. 280
 With lutestrings he would counterfeit
 Maggots that crawl on dish of meat ;
 Quote moles and spots on any place
 O' th' body, by the index face ;
 Detect lost maidenheads by sneezing, 285
 Or breaking wind of dames, or pissing ;
 Cure warts and corns with application
 Of med'cines to th' imagination ;
 Fright agues into dogs, and scare
 With rhymes the toothach and catarrh ; 290
 Chase evil spirits away by dint
 Of sickle, horse-shoe, hollow flint ;
 Spit fire out of a walnut-shell,
 Which made the Roman slaves rebel ;
 And fire a mine in China here 295
 With sympathetic gunpowder.
 He knew whats'ever 's to be known,

But much more than he knew would own.
 What med'cine 'twas that Paracelsus
 Could make a man with, as he tells us ; 300
 What figur'd slates are best to make
 On wat'ry surface duck or drake ;
 What bowling-stones, in running race
 Upon a board, have swiftest pace ;
 Whether a pulse beat in the black 305
 List of a dappled louse's back ;
 If systole or diastole move
 Quickest when he's in wrath, or love ;
 When two of them do run a race,
 Whether they gallop, trot, or pace ; 310
 How many scores a flea will jump
 Of his own length from head to rump,
 Which Socrates and Chærephon
 In vain assay'd so long ago ;
 Whether his snout a perfect nose is, 315
 And not an elephant's proboscis ;
 How many diff'rent specieses
 Of maggots breed in rotten cheese ;
 And which are next of kin to those
 Engender'd in a chandler's nose ; 320
 Or those not seen, but understood,
 That live in vinegar and wood.
 A paltry wretch he had, half-starv'd,
 That him in place of zany serv'd,
 Hight Whachum, bred to dash and draw, 325

³²⁵ 'Whachum,' journeyman to Sidrophel, who was one
 'Tom Jones,' a foolish Welshman. In a key to a poem of
 Mr. Butler's, Whachum is said to be one 'Richard Green,'
 who published a pamphlet of about five sheets of base
 ribaldry, and called 'Hudibras in a snare.' It was printed
 about the year 1667.

Not wine, but more unwholesome law ;
 To make 'twixt words and lines huge gaps,
 Wide as meridians in maps ;
 To squander paper and spare ink,
 Or cheat men of their words, some think. 330
 From this, by merited degrees,
 He'd to more high advancement rise,
 To be an under conjurer,
 Or journeyman astrologer :
 His bus'ness was to pump and wheedle, 335
 And men with their own keys unriddle ;
 To make them to themselves give answers,
 For which they pay the necromancers ;
 To fetch and carry' intelligence
 Of whom, and what, and where, and whence, 340
 And all discoveries disperse
 Among th' whole pack of conjurers ;
 What cut-purses have left with them
 For the right owners to redeem,
 And what they dare not vent, find out, 345
 To gain themselves and th' art repute ;
 Draw figures, schemes, and horoscopes,
 Of Newgate, Bridewell, brokers' shops,
 Of thieves ascendant in the cart,
 And find out all by rules of art : 350
 Which way a serving-man, that's run
 With clothes or money away, is gone ;
 Who pick'd a fob at Holding-forth,
 And where a watch for half the worth
 May be redeem'd ; or stolen plate 355
 Restor'd at conscionable rate.
 Beside all this he serv'd his master
 In quality of poetaster,
 And rhymes appropriate could make

To ev'ry month i' th' almanack ; 260
 When terms begin and end could tell,
 With their returns, in doggerel ;
 When the Exchequer opes and shuts,
 And sow-gelder with safety cuts ;
 When men may eat and drink their fill, 365
 And when be temp'rate if they will ;
 When use, and when abstain from, vice,
 Figs, grapes, phlebotomy, and spice.
 And as in prison mean rogues beat
 Hemp for the service of the great, 370
 So Whachum beat his dirty brains
 T' advance his master's fame and gains ;
 And, like the devil's oracles,
 Put into dogg'rel rhymes his spells,
 Which, over ev'ry month's blank page 375
 I' th' almanack, strange bilks presage.
 He would an elegy compose
 On maggots squeez'd out of his nose ;
 In lyric numbers write an ode on
 His mistress eating a black pudden ; 380
 And when imprison'd air escap'd her,
 It puft him with poetic rapture :
 His sonnets charm'd th' attentive crowd,
 By wide-mouth'd mortal troll'd aloud,
 That, circled with his long-ear'd guests, 385
 Like Orpheus look'd among the beasts :
 A carman's horse could not pass by,
 But stood ty'd up to poetry ;
 No porter's burthen pass'd along,
 But serv'd for burthen to his song : 390
 Each window like a pill'ry appears,
 With heads thrust through, nail'd by the ears ;
 All trades run in as to the sight

Of monsters, or their dear delight
 The gallow-tree, when cutting purse 395
 Breeds bus'ness for heroic verse,
 Which none does hear but would have hung
 T' have been the theme of such a song.

Those two together long had liv'd
 In mansion prudently contriv'd, 400
 Where neither tree nor house could bar
 The free detection of a star ;
 And nigh an ancient obelisk
 Was rais'd by him, found out by Fisk,
 On which was written, not in words, 405
 But hieroglyphic mute of birds,
 Many rare pithy saws concerning
 The worth of astrologic learning :
 From top of this there hung a rope,
 To which he fasten'd telescope, 410
 The spectacles with which the stars
 He reads in smallest characters.

It happen'd as a boy one night
 Did fly his tarsel of a kite,
 The strangest long-wing'd hawk that flies, 415
 That, like a bird of Paradise,
 Or herald's martlet, has no legs,
 Nor hatches young ones, nor lays eggs ;
 His train was six yards long, milk-white,
 At th' end of which there hung a light, 420

⁴⁰⁴ Mr. Butler alludes to one 'Fisk,' of whom Lilly observes, that he was a licentiate in physic, and born near Framlingham in Suffolk ; was bred at a country-school, and designed for the university, but went not thither, studying physic and astrology at home, which afterwards he practised at Colchester ; after which he came to London, and practised there.

Enclos'd in lantern made of paper,
 That far off like a star did appear :
 This Sidrophel by chance espy'd,
 And, with amazement staring wide,
 Bless us ! quoth he, what dreadful wonder 425
 Is that appears in heaven yonder ?
 A comet, and without a beard !
 Or star that ne'er before appear'd ?
 I'm certain 'tis not in the scrawl
 Of all those beasts, and fish, and fowl, 430
 With which, like Indian plantations,
 The learned stock the constellations ;
 Nor those that drawn for signs have bin
 To th' houses where the planets inn.
 It must be supernatural, 435
 Unless it be that cannon-ball
 That, shot i' th' air point-blank upright,
 Was borne to that prodigious height
 That learn'd philosophers maintain,
 It ne'er came backwards down again, 440
 But in the airy region yet
 Hangs, like the body of Mahomet :
 For if it be above the shade
 That by the earth's round bulk is made,
 'Tis probable it may from far 445
 Appear no bullet, but a star.

This said, he to his engine flew,
 Plac'd near at hand, in open view,
 And rais'd it till it levell'd right
 Against the glow-worm tail of kite, 450
 Then peeping through, Bless us ! (quoth he)
 It is a planet now, I see ;
 And, if I err not, by his proper
 Figure, that's like tobacco-stopper,

It should be Saturn : yes, 'tis clear 455
 'Tis Saturn, but what makes him there ?
 He's got between the Dragon's tail
 And farther leg behind o' th' Whale ;
 Pray Heav'n divert the fatal omen,
 For 'tis a prodigy not common, 460
 And can no less than the world's end,
 Or Nature's funeral, portend.
 With that he fell again to pry
 Through perspective more wistfully,
 When, by mischance, the fatal string, 465
 That kept the tow'ring fowl on wing,
 Breaking, down fell the star. Well shot,
 Quoth Whachum, who right wisely thought
 He 'ad levell'd at a star, and hit it ;
 But Sidrophel, more subtil-witted, 470
 Cry'd out, What horrible and fearful
 Portent is this, to see a star fall !
 It threatens Nature, and the doom
 Will not be long before it come !
 When stars do fall, 'tis plain enough 475
 The day of judgment 's not far off ;
 As lately 'twas reveal'd to Sedgwick,

⁴⁷⁷ William Sedgwick, a whimsical enthusiast, sometimes a Presbyterian, sometimes an Independent, and at other times an Anabaptist ; sometimes a prophet, and pretended to foretell things, out of the pulpit, to the destruction of ignorant people ; at other times pretended to revelations ; and, upon pretence of a vision that Doomsday was at hand, he retired to the house of Sir Francis Russel, in Cambridge-shire ; and finding several gentlemen at bowls, called upon them to prepare for their dissolution ; telling them that he had lately received a revelation that Doomsday would be some day the week following. Upon which they ever after called him 'Doomsday Sedgwick.'

And some of us find out by magic :
 Then since the time we have to live
 In this world's shorten'd, let us strive 480
 To make our best advantage of it,
 And pay our losses with our profit.

This feat fell out not long before
 The Knight, upon the forenam'd score,
 In quest of Sidrophel advancing, 485
 Was now in prospect of the mansion ;
 Whom he discov'ring, turn'd his glass,
 And found far off 'twas Hudibras.

Whachum (quoth he), look yonder, some
 To try or use our art are come : 490
 The one 's the learned Knight ; seek out,
 And pump 'em what they come about.
 Whachum advanc'd with all submiss'ness
 T' accost 'em, but much more their bus'ness :
 He held a stirrup, while the Knight 495
 From leathern Bare-bones did alight ;
 And taking from his hand the bridle,
 Approach'd, the dark Squire to unriddle.
 He gave him first the time o' the day,
 And welcom'd him as he might say : 500
 He ask'd him whence they came, and whither
 Their bus'ness lay ?—Quoth Ralpo, Hither.—
 Did you not lose—Quoth Ralpo, Nay—
 Quoth Whachum, Sir, I meant your way.
 Your knight—Quoth Ralpo, is a lover, 505
 And pains intol'erable doth suffer ;
 For lovers' hearts are not their own hearts,
 Nor lights, nor lungs, and so forth downwards.—
 What time—Quoth Ralpo, Sir, too long ;
 Three years it off and on has hung.— 510
 Quoth he, I meant what time o' th' day 'tis.—

Quoth Ralpho, Between seven and eight 'tis.—
 Why then (quoth Whachum) my small art
 Tells me the dame has a hard heart,
 Or great estate.—Quoth Ralph, A jointer, 515
 Which makes him have so hot a mind t' her.—
 Meanwhile the Knight was making water,
 Before he fell upon the matter ;
 Which having done, the Wizard steps in,
 To give him suitable reception ; 520
 But kept his bus'ness at a bay,
 Till Whachum put him in the way ;
 Who having now, by Ralpho's light,
 Expounded th' errand of the Knight,
 And what he came to know, drew near, 525
 To whisper in the conj'rer's ear,
 Which he prevented thus : what was 't,
 Quoth he, that I was saying last,
 Before these gentlemen arriv'd ?
 Quoth Whachum, Venus you retriev'd, 530
 In opposition with Mars,
 And no benign and friendly stars
 T' allay the effect. Quoth Wizard, So !
 In Virgo ? Ha ! quoth Whachum, No.
 Has Saturn nothing to do in it ? 535
 One tenth of 's circle to a minute.
 'Tis well, quoth he.—Sir, you'll excuse
 This rudeness I am forc'd to use ;
 It is a scheme and face of heaven,
 As th' aspects are dispos'd this even, 540
 I was contemplating upon
 When you arriv'd ; but now I've done.
 Quoth Hudibras, If I appear
 Unseasonable in coming here
 At such a time, to interrupt 545

Your speculations, which I hop'd
Assistance from, and come to use,
'Tis fit that I ask your excuse.

By no means, Sir, quoth Sidrophel,
The stars your coming did foretell ; 550
I did expect you here, and knew,
Before you spake, your bus'ness too.

Quoth Hudibras, Make that appear,
And I shall credit whatsoe'er
You tell me after, on your word, 555
Howe'er unlikely or absurd.

You are in love, Sir, with a widow,
Quoth he, that does not greatly heed you,
And for three years has rid your wit
And passion without drawing bit ; 560
And now your bus'ness is to know
If you shall carry her or no.

Quoth Hudibras, You're in the right,
But how the devil you come by 't
I can't imagine ; for the stars 565
I 'm sure can tell no more than a horse ;
Nor can their aspects (though you pore
Your eyes out on them) tell you more
Than th' oracle of sieve and sheers
That turns as certain as the spheres : 570
But if the devil 's of your counsel
Much may be done, my noble Donzel ;
And 'tis on his account I come,
To know from you my fatal doom.

Quoth Sidrophel, If you suppose, 575
Sir Knight, that I am one of those,
I might suspect, and take th' alarm,
Your bus'ness is but to inform ;
But if it be, 'tis ne'er the near,

You have a wrong sow by the ear ; 580
 For I assure you, for my part,
 I only deal by rules of art,
 Such as are lawful, and judge by
 Conclusions of astrology ;
 But for the devil know nothing by him, 585
 But only this, that I defy him.

Quoth he, Whatever others deem ye,
 I understand your metonymy ;
 Your words of second-hand intention,
 When things by wrongful names you mention ;
 The mystic sense of all your terms,
 That are indeed but magic charms
 To raise the devil, and mean one thing,
 And that is downright conjuring ;
 And in itself more warrantable 595
 Than cheat, or canting to a rabble,
 Or putting tricks upon the moon,
 Which by confed'racy are done.
 Your ancient conjurers were wont
 To make her from her sphere dismount, 600
 And to their incantations stoop ;
 They scorn'd to pore through telescope,
 Or idly play at bo-peep with her,
 To find out cloudy or fair weather,
 Which ev'ry almanack can tell 605
 Perhaps as learnedly and well
 As you yourself. Then, friend, I doubt
 You go the farthest way about.
 Your modern Indian magician
 Makes but a hole in th' earth to piss in, 610
 And straight resolves all questions by 't,
 And seldom fails to be i' th' right.
 The Rosycrucian way 's more sure

To bring the devil to the lure ;
 Each of 'em has a sev'ral gin 615
 To catch intelligences in.
 Some by the nose with fumes trepan 'em,
 As Dunstan did the devil's grannam ;
 Others with characters and words
 Catch 'em, as men in nets do birds ; 620
 And some with symbols, signs, and tricks,
 Engrav'd in planetary nicks,
 With their own influences will fetch 'em
 Down from their orbs, arrest, and catch 'em :
 Make 'em depose and answer to 625
 All questions ere they let them go.
 Bumbastus kept a devil's bird
 Shut in the pummel of his sword,
 That taught him all the cunning pranks
 Of past and future mountebanks. 630
 Kelly did all his feats upon
 The devil's looking-glass, a stone,
 Where, playing with him at bo-peep,
 He solv'd all problems, ne'er so deep.
 Agrippa kept a Stygian pug 635
 I' th' garb and habit of a dog,
 That was his tutor, and the cur

⁶¹⁸ St. Dunstan was made Archbishop of Canterbury anno 961. His skill in the liberal arts and sciences (qualifications much above the genius of the age he lived in) gained him first the name of a Conjuror, and then of a Saint : he is revered as such by the Romanists, who keep a holiday in honour of him yearly, on the 19th of May.

⁶³¹ This Kelly was chief seer, or, as Lilly calls him, Speculator, to Dr. Dee ; was born at Worcester, and bred an apothecary, and was a good proficient in chemistry, and pretended to have the grand elixir, or philosopher's stone, which Lilly tells us he made, or at least received ready

Read to th' occult philosopher,
 And taught him subt'ly to maintain
 All other sciences are vain.

640

To this quoth Sidrophello, Sir,
 Agrippa was no conjurer,
 Nor Paracelsus, no, nor Behmen ;
 Nor was the dog a cacodæmon,
 But a true dog, that would shew tricks
 For th' Emperor, and leap o'er sticks ;
 Would fetch and carry, was more civil
 Than other dogs, but yet no devil ;
 And whatsoe'er he's said to do,
 He went the self-same way we go.
 As for the Rosycross philosophers,
 Whom you will have to be but sorcerers,
 What they pretend to is no more
 Than Trismegistus did before,
 Pythagoras, old Zoroaster,
 And Apollonius their master,
 To whom they do confess they owe
 All that they do, and all they know.

645

650

655

Quoth Hudibras, Alas ! what is 't t' us
 Whether 'twas said by Trismegistus,
 If it be nonsense, false, or mystic,
 Or not intelligible, or sophistic ?

660

made from a Friar in Germany, on the confines of the Emperor's dominions. He pretended to see apparitions in a crystal or beryl looking-glass (or a round stone like a crystal). Alasco, Palatine of Poland; Pucel, a learned Florentine; and Prince Rosemberg of Germany, the Emperor's Viceroy in Bohemia; were long of the society with him and Dr. Dee, and often present at their apparitions, as was once the King of Poland himself. But Lilly observes that he was so wicked that the angels would not appear to him willingly, nor be obedient to him.

'Tis not antiquity, nor author,
 That makes truth Truth, although Time's daughter ;
 'Twas he that put her in the pit 665
 Before he pull'd her out of it ;
 And as he eats his sons, just so
 He feeds upon his daughters too.
 Nor does it follow, 'cause a herald
 Can make a gentleman, scarce a year old, 670
 To be descended of a race
 Of ancient kings in a small space,
 That we should all opinions hold
 Authentic that we can make old.

Quoth Sidrophel, It is no part 675
 Of prudence to cry down an art,
 And what it may perform deny
 Because you understand not why
 (As Averrhois play'd but a mean trick
 To damn our whole art for eccentric) ; 680
 For who knows all that knowledge contains ?
 Men dwell not on the tops of mountains,
 But on their sides or rising's seat ;
 So 'tis with knowledge's vast height.

669 670 Such gentry were Thomas Pury, the elder, first a weaver in Gloucester, then an ignorant solicitor ; John Blackston, a poor shopkeeper of Newcastle ; John Birch, formerly a carrier, afterwards Colonel ; Richard Salway, Colonel, formerly a grocer's man ; Thomas Rainsborough a skipper of Lynn, Colonel and Vice-Admiral of England ; Colonel Thomas Scot, a brewer's clerk ; Colonel Philip Skippon, originally a waggoner to Sir Francis Vere ; Colonel John Jones, a serving-man ; Colonel Barkstead, a pitiful thimble and bodkin goldsmith ; Colonel Pride, foundling and drayman ; Colonel Hewson, a one-eyed cobbler ; and Colonel Harrison, a butcher. These and hundreds more affected to be thought gentlemen, and lorded it over persons of the first rank and quality.

Do not the hist'ries of all ages 685
 Relate miraculous presages
 Of strange turns in the world's affairs
 Foreseen b' astrologers, soothsayers,
 Chaldeans, learn'd Genethliacks,
 And some that have writ almanacks? 690
 The Median Emp'ror dream'd his daughter
 Had piss'd all Asia under water,
 And that a vine, sprung from her haunches,
 O'erspread his empire with its branches;
 And did not soothsayers expound it 695
 As after by th' event he found it?
 When Cæsar in the senate fell,
 Did not the sun eclips'd foretell,
 And in resentment of his slaughter
 Look'd pale for almost a year after? 700
 Augustus having, by' oversight,
 Put on his left shoe 'fore his right,
 Had like to have been slain that day
 By soldiers mutin'ing for pay.
 Are there not myriads of this sort 705
 Which stories of all times report?
 Is it not ominous in all countries
 When crows and ravens croak upon trees?
 The Roman senate, when within
 The city walls an owl was seen, 710
 Did cause their clergy, with lustrations
 (Our Synod calls Humiliations),
 The round-fac'd prodigy t' avert
 From doing town or country hurt.
 And if an owl have so much pow'r, 715
 Why should not planets have much more,
 That in a region far above
 Inferior fowls of the air move,

And should see further, and foreknow
More than their augury below ? 720

Though that once serv'd the polity
Of mighty states to govern by ;
And this is what we take in hand
By pow'rful Art to understand ;
Which how we have perform'd all ages 725
Can speak th' events of our presages.

Have we not lately in the moon
Found a new world, to th' old unknown ?
Discover'd sea and land Columbus
And Magellan could never compass ? 730
Made mountains with our tubes appear,
And cattle grazing on 'em there ?

Quoth Hudibras, You lie so ope
That I, without a telescope,
Can find your tricks out, and descry 735
Where you tell truth and where you lye :
For Anaxagoras, long agon,
Saw hills, as well as you, i' th' moon,
And held the sun was but a piece
Of red-hot ir'n as big as Greece ; 740
Believ'd the heav'ns were made of stone,
Because the sun had voided one ;
And, rather than he would recant
Th' opinion, suffer'd banishment.

But what, alas ! is it to us 745
Whether i' th' moon men thus or thus
Do eat their porridge, cut their corns,
Or whether they have tails or horns ?
What trade from thence can you advance
But what we nearer have from France ? 750
What can our travellers bring home
That is not to be learnt at Rome ?

What politics or strange opinions
 That are not in our own dominions ?
 What science can be brought from thence 755
 In which we do not here commence ?
 What revelations or religions
 That are not in our native regions ?
 Are sweating-lanterns or screen-fans
 Made better there than th' are in France ? 760
 Or do they teach to sing and play
 O' th' guitar there a newer way ?
 Can they make plays there that shall fit
 The public humour with less wit ;
 Write wittier dances, quainter shows, 765
 Or fight with more ingenious blows ?
 Or does the man i' th' moon look big,
 And wear a huger periwig ?
 Shew in his gate or face more tricks
 Than our own native lunatics ? 770
 But if w' outdo him here at home,
 What good of your design can come ?
 As wind i' th' hypocondres pent
 Is but a blast if downward sent,
 But if it upward chance to fly 775
 Becomes new light and prophecy ;
 So when your speculations tend
 Above their just and useful end,
 Although they promise strange and great
 Discoveries of things far set, 780
 They are but idle dreams and fancies,
 And savour strongly of the ganzas.
 Tell me but what's the natural cause
 Why on a sign no painter draws
 The full-moon ever, but the half ? 785
 Resolve that with your Jacob's staff ;

Or why wolves raise a hubbub at her,
 And dogs howl when she shines in water ?
 And I shall freely give my vote
 You may know something more remote. 790
 At this deep Sidrophel look'd wise,
 And, staring round with owl-like eyes,
 He put his face into a posture
 Of sapience, and began to bluster ;
 For having three times shook his head, 795
 To stir his wit up, thus he said :
 Art has no mortal enemies
 Next ignorance, but owls and geese ;
 Those consecrated geese in orders
 That to the capitol were warders, 800
 And, being then upon patrol,
 With noise alone beat off the Gaul ;
 Or those Athenian sceptic owls
 That will not credit their own souls,
 Or any science understand 805
 Beyond the reach of eye or hand,
 But, meas'ring all things by their own
 Knowledge, hold nothing 's to be known ;
 Those wholesale critics, that in coffee-
 Houses cry down all philosophy, 810
 And will not know upon what ground
 In Nature we our doctrine found,
 Although with pregnant evidence
 We can demonstrate it to sense,
 As I just now have done to you, 815
 Foretelling what you came to know.
 Were the stars only made to light
 Robbers and burglars by night ?
 To wait on drunkards, thieves, gold-finders,
 And lovers solacing behind doors, 820

Or giving one another pledges
 Of matrimony under hedges ?
 Or witches simpling, and on gibbets
 Cutting from malefactors snippets,
 Or from the pill'ry tips of ears 825
 Of rebel saints and perjurers ?
 Only to stand by and look on,
 But not know what is said or done ?
 Is there a constellation there
 That was not born and bred up here, 830
 And therefore cannot be to learn
 In any inferior concern ?
 Were they not, during all their lives,
 Most of them pirates, whores, and thieves ?
 And is it like they have not still 835
 In their old practices some skill ?
 Is there a planet that by birth
 Does not derive its house from earth,
 And therefore probably must know
 What is and hath been done below ? 840
 Who made the Balance, or whence came
 The Bull, the Lion, and the Ram ?
 Did not we here the Argo rig,
 Make Berenice's periwig ?
 Whose liv'ry does the Coachman wear ? 845
 Or who made Cassiopeia's chair ?
 And therefore, as they came from hence,
 With us may hold intelligence.
 Plato deny'd the world can be
 Govern'd without geometry 850
 (For money b'ing the common scale
 Of things by measure, weight, and tale,
 In all th' affairs of church and state
 'Tis both the balance and the weight) ;

Then much less can it be without 855
 Divine astrology made out,
 That puts the other down in worth
 As far as heaven's above the earth.

These reasons (quoth the Knight) I grant
 Are something more significant 860

Than any that the learned use
 Upon this subject to produce ;
 And yet th' are far from satisfactory
 T' establish and keep up your factory.

Th' Egyptians say, the sun has twice 865
 Shifted his setting and his rise ;

Twice has he risen in the west,
 As many times set in the east :
 But whether that be true or no
 The devil any of you know. 870

Some hold the heavens, like a top,
 Are kept by circulation up,
 And, were 't not for their wheeling round,
 They'd instantly fall to the ground ;

As sage Empedocles of old, 875
 And, from him, modern authors hold.

Plato believ'd the sun and moon
 Below all other planets run.

Some Mercury, some Venus, seat
 Above the sun himself in height. 880

The learned Scaliger complain'd,
 'Gainst what Copernicus maintain'd,
 That, in twelve hundred years and odd,
 The sun had left its ancient road,

And nearer to the earth is come 885
 'Bove fifty thousand miles from home ;

Swore 'twas a most notorious flam,
 And he that had so little shame
 To vent such fopperies abroad
 Deserv'd to have his rump well claw'd ; 890
 Which Monsieur Bodin hearing, swore
 That he deserv'd the rod much more
 That durst upon a truth give doom
 He knew less than the Pope of Rome.
 Cardan believ'd great states depend 895
 Upon the tip o' th' Bear's tail's end,
 That, as she whisk'd it t'wards the sun,
 Strew'd mighty empires up and down ;
 Which others say must needs be false,
 Because your true bears have no tails. 900
 Some say the Zodiac constellations
 Have long since chang'd their antique stations
 Above a sign, and prove the same
 In Taurus now, once in the Ram ;
 Affirm the Trignons chopp'd and chang'd, 905
 The wat'ry with the fiery rang'd :
 Then how can their effects still hold
 To be the same they were of old ?
 This, though the art were true, would make
 Our modern soothsayers mistake, 910
 And is one cause they tell more lies
 In figures and nativities
 Than th' old Chaldean conjurers
 In so many hundred thousand years ;
 Beside their nonsense in translating, 915

894 VAR. ' He knew no more,' &c.

901 VAR. ' Some say the stars i' th' Zodiac
 Are more than a whole sign gone back
 Since Ptolemy ; and prove the same
 In Taurus now, then in the Ram.'

For want of Accidence and Latin,
 Like Idus and Calendæ, Englishit
 The Quarter-days by skilful linguist :
 And yet with canting, sleight, and cheat,
 'Twill serve their turn to do the feat ; 920
 Make fools believe in their foreseeing
 Of things before they are in being ;
 To swallow gudgeons ere they're catch'd,
 And count their chickens ere they're hatch'd ;
 Make them the constellations prompt, 925
 And give them back their own accompt ;
 But still the best to him that gives
 The best price for't, or best believes.
 Some towns, some cities, some, for brevity,
 Have cast the versal world's nativity, 930
 And made the infant-stars confess,
 Like fools or children, what they please.
 Some calculate the hidden fates
 Of monkeys, puppy-dogs, and cats ;
 Some running-nags and fighting-cocks ; 935
 Some love, trade, law-suits, and the pox ;
 Some take a measure of the lives
 Of fathers, mothers, husbands, wives,
 Make opposition, trine, and quartile,
 Tell who is barren and who fertile. 940
 As if the planet's first aspect
 The tender infant did infect
 In soul and body, and instill
 All future good and future ill ;
 Which, in their dark fatal'ties lurking, 945
 At destin'd periods fall a-working,
 And break out, like the hidden seeds
 Of long diseases, into deeds,
 In friendships, enmities, and strife,

And all th' emergencies of life : 950
 No sooner does he peep into
 The world but he has done his do,
 Catch'd all diseases, took all physic
 That cures or kills a man that is sick,
 Marry'd his punctual dose of wives, 955
 Is cuckolded, and breaks or thrives.
 There's but the twinkling of a star
 Between a man of peace and war,
 A thief and justice, fool and knave,
 A huffing officer and a slave, 960
 A crafty lawyer and pick-pocket,
 A great philosopher and a blockhead,
 A formal preacher and a player,
 A learn'd physician and man-slayer ;
 As if men from the stars did suck 965
 Old age, diseases, and ill-luck,
 Wit, folly, honour, virtue, vice,
 Trade, travel, women, claps, and dice,
 And draw, with the first air they breathe,
 Battle and murder, sudden death. 970
 Are not these fine commodities
 To be imported from the skies,
 And vended here among the rabble
 For staple goods and warrantable ?
 Like money by the Druids borrow'd, 975
 In th' other world to be restored.

Quoth Sidrophel, To let you know
 You wrong the art and artists too,
 Since arguments are lost on those
 That do our principles oppose, 980
 I will (although I've done 't before)

Demonstrate to your sense once more,
 And draw a figure that shall tell you
 What you perhaps forget befell you,
 By way of horary inspection, 985
 Which some account our worst erection.
 With that he circles draws and squares,
 With ciphers, astral characters,
 Then looks 'em o'er to understand 'em,
 Although set down hab-nab at random. 990

Quoth he, This scheme of th' heavens set
 Discovers how in fight you met
 At Kingston with a May-pole idol,
 And that y' were bang'd both back and side well;
 And, though you overcame the Bear, 995
 The dogs beat you at Brentford fair,
 Where sturdy butchers broke your noddle,
 And handled you like a fop-doodle.

Quoth Hudibras, I now perceive
 You are no conj'rer : by your leave : 1000
 That paltry story is untrue,
 And forg'd to cheat such gulls as you.

Not true ! quoth he ; Howe'er you vapour,
 I can what I affirm make appear ;
 Whachum shall justify 't t' your face, 1005
 And prove he was upon the place :
 He play'd the saltinbancho's part,
 Transform'd t' a Frenchman by my art ;
 He stole your cloak, and pick'd your pocket,
 Chous'd and caldes'd you like a blockhead, 1010
 And what you lost I can produce,
 If you deny it, here i' th' house.

Quoth Hudibras, I do believe

¹⁰¹⁰ VAR. ' Caldes'd.' Put the fortune-teller on him.

That argument 's demonstrative ;
 Ralpho, bear witness, and go fetch us 1015
 A constable to seize the wretches :
 For though th' are both false knaves and cheats,
 Impostors, jugglers, counterfeits,
 I'll make them serve for perpendic'lars
 As true as e'er were us'd by bricklayers. 1020
 They 're guilty, by their own confessions,
 Of felony, and at the Sessions,
 Upon the bench, I will so handle 'em,
 That the vibration of this pendulum
 Shall make all tailors' yards of one 1025
 Unanimous opinion ;
 A thing he long has vapour'd of,
 But now shall make it out by proof.

Quoth Sidrophel, I do not doubt
 To find friends that will bear me out ; 1030
 Nor have I hazarded my art
 And neck so long on the State's part
 To be expos'd i' th' end to suffer
 By such a braggadocio huffer.

Huffer ! quoth Hudibras, this sword 1035
 Shall down thy false throat cram that word.
 Ralpho, make haste, and call an officer
 To apprehend this Stygian sophister ;
 Meanwhile I'll hold 'em at a bay,
 Lest he and Whachum run away. 1040

But Sidrophel, who from th' aspect
 Of Hudibras did now erect
 A figure worse portending far
 Than that of most malignant star,
 Believ'd it now the fittest moment 1045
 To shun the danger that might come on 't,
 While Hudibras was all alone,

And he and Whachum two to one.
 This being resolv'd, he spy'd by chance
 Behind the door an iron lance, 1050
 That many a sturdy limb had gor'd,
 And legs, and loins, and shoulders bor'd ;
 He snatch'd it up, and made a pass
 To make his way through Hudibras.
 Whachum had got a fire-fork, 1055
 With which he vow'd to do his work ;
 But Hudibras was well prepar'd,
 And stoutly stood upon his guard :
 He put by Sidrophello's thrust,
 And in right manfully he rusht ; 060
 The weapon from his gripe he wrung,
 And laid him on the earth along.
 Whachum his sea-coal prong threw by,
 And basely turn'd his back to fly ;
 But Hudibras gave him a twitch, 1065
 As quick as lightning, in the breech,
 Just in the place where honour 's lodg'd,
 As wise philosophers have judg'd.
 Because a kick in that place more
 Hurts honour than deep wounds before. 1070
 Quoth Hudibras, The stars determine
 You are my prisoners, base vermine :
 Could they not tell you so, as well
 As what I came to know foretell ?
 By this what cheats you are we find, 1075
 That, in your own concerns are blind.
 Your lives are now at my dispose,
 To be redeem'd by fine or blows ;
 But who his honour would defile
 To take or sell two lives so vile ? 1080
 I'll give you quarter ; but your pillage,

The conqu'ring warrior's crop and tillage
Which with his sword he reaps and plows,
That 's mine, the law of arms allows.

This said in haste, in haste he fell 1085
To rummaging of Sidrophel.

First he expounded both his pockets,
And found a watch, with rings and lockets,
Which had been left with him t' erect

A figure for, and so detect ; 1090

A copper-plate, with almanacks

Engrav'd upon 't, with other knacks

Of Booker's, Lilly's, Sarah Jimmers',

And blank schemes to discover nimmers ;

A moon-dial, with Napier's bones, 1095

And several constellation-stones,

Engrav'd in planetary hours,

That over mortals had strange powers

To make them thrive in law or trade,

And stab or poison to evade, 1100

In wit or wisdom to improve,

And be victorious in love.

Whachum had neither cross nor pile,

His plunder was not worth the while.

All which the conqu'ror did discompt, 1105

To pay for curing of his rump.

But Sidrophel, as full of tricks

As Rota-men of politics,

¹⁰⁹³ John Booker was born in Manchester, and was a famous astrologer in the time of the civil wars. He was a great acquaintance of Lilly's; and so was this Sarah Jimmers, whom Lilly calls 'Sarah Shelhorn,' a great speculatrix. He owns he was very familiar with her ('quod nota'), so that it is no wonder that the Knight found several of their knick-knacks in Sidrophel's cabinet.

Straight cast about to overreach
 Th' unwary conqu'ror with a fetch, 1110
 And make him glad at least to quit
 His victory, and fly the pit,
 Before the secular prince of darkness
 Arriv'd to seize upon his carcass :
 And as a fox, with hot pursuit 1115
 Chas'd through a warren, casts about
 To save his credit, and among
 Dead vermine on a gallows hung,
 And while the dogs run underneath,
 Escap'd (by counterfeiting death), 1120
 Not out of cunning, but a train
 Of atoms justling in his brain,
 As learn'd philosophers give out ;
 So Sidrophello cast about,
 And fell t' his wonted trade again 1125
 To feign himself in earnest slain.
 First stretch'd out one leg, then another,
 And, seeming in his breast to smother
 A broken sigh ; quoth he, Where am I ?
 Alive or dead ? or which way came I 1130
 Through so immense a space so soon ?
 But now I thought myself i' th' moon,
 And that a monster, with huge whiskers
 More formidable than a Switzer's,
 My body through and through had drill'd, 1135
 And Whachum by my side had kill'd ;
 Had cross-examin'd both our hose,
 And plunder'd all we had to lose :
 Look ! there he is ! I see him now,
 And feel the place I am run through ! 1140
 And there lies Whachum by my side
 Stone dead, and in his own blood dy'd !

Oh! oh!—With that he fetch'd a groan,
And fell again into a swoon,
Shut both his eyes, and stopp'd his breath, 1145
And to the life outacted death,
That Hudibras, to all appearing,
Believ'd him to be dead as herring.
He held it now no longer safe
To tarry the return of Ralph, 1150
But rather leave him in the lurch:
Thought he, He has abus'd our Church,
Refus'd to give himself one firck
To carry on the Public Work;
Despis'd our Synod-men like dirt, 1155
And made their discipline his sport;
Divulg'd the secrets of their Classes,
And their Conventions prov'd high-places;
Disparag'd their tithe-pigs as Pagan,
And set at nought their cheese and bacon; 1160
Rail'd at their Covenant, and jeer'd
Their rev'rend Parsons to my beard;
For all which scandals to be quit
At once this juncture falls out fit.
I'll make him henceforth to beware, 1165
And tempt my fury if he dare:
He must at least hold up his hand,
By twelve freeholders to be scann'd,
Who, by their skill in palmistry,
Will quickly read his destiny, 1170
And make him glad to read his lesson,
Or take a turn for 't at the Session,
Unless his Light and gifts prove truer
Than ever yet they did, I'm sure:
For if he 'scape with whipping now, 1175
'Tis more than he can hope to do;

And that will disengage my Conscience
Of th' obligation, in his own sense.
I'll make him now by force abide,
What he by gentle means deny'd, 1180
To give my honour satisfaction,
And right the Brethren in the action.
This being resolv'd, with equal speed
And conduct he approach'd his steed,
And, with activity unwont, 1185
Assay'd the lofty beast to mount ;
Which once achiev'd, he spurr'd his palfry
To get from th' enemy and Ralph free ;
Left dangers, fears, and foes behind,
And beat at least three lengths the wind. 1190

AN HEROICAL EPISTLE*

OF HUDIBRAS TO SIDROPHEL.

Ecce iterum Crispinus. . . .

WELL, Sidrophel, though 'tis in vain
 To tamper with your crazy brain,
 Without trepanning of your scull
 As often as the moon 's at full,
 'Tis not amiss, ere y' are giv'n o'er, 5
 To try one desp'rate med'cine more ;
 For where your case can be no worse
 The desp'rat'st is the wisest course.
 Is 't possible that you, whose ears
 Are of the tribe of Issachar's, 10
 And might (with equal reason) either
 For merit or extent of leather,
 With William Pryn's, before they were
 Retrench'd and crucify'd, compare,

* This Epistle was published ten years after the Third Canto of the Second Part, to which it is now annexed, namely, in the year 1674; and is said, in a Key to a Burlesque Poem of Mr. Butler's, published 1706, p. 13, to have been occasioned by Sir Paul Neal, a conceited virtuoso, and member of the Royal Society, who constantly affirmed that Mr. Butler was not the author of Hudibras, which gave rise to this Epistle; and by some he has been taken for the real Sidrophel of the poem. This was the gentleman, who, I am told, made a great discovery of an elephant in the moon, which, upon examination, proved to be no other than a mouse which had mistaken its way, and got into his telescope. See 'The Elephant in the Moon,' vol. ii.

Should yet be deaf against a noise 15
 So roaring as the public voice ?
 That speaks your virtues free and loud,
 And openly in every crowd,
 As loud as one that sings his part
 T' a wheelbarrow or turnip-cart, 20
 Or your new nick-nam'd old invention
 To cry green hastings with an engine
 (As if the vehemence had stunn'd
 And torn your drum-heads with the sound) ;
 And 'cause your folly 's now no news, 25
 But overgrown and out of use,
 Persuade yourself there 's no such matter,
 But that 'tis vanish'd out of Nature ;
 When Folly, as it grows in years,
 The more extravagant appears ; 30
 For who but you could be possest
 With so much ignorance and beast,
 That neither all men's scorn and hate,
 Nor being laugh'd and pointed at,
 Nor bray'd so often in a mortar, 35
 Can teach you wholesome sense and nurture,
 But (like a reprobate) what course
 Soever us'd, grow worse and worse ?
 Can no transfusion of the blood,
 That makes fools cattle, do you good ? 40
 Nor putting pigs t' a bitch to nurse,
 To turn them into mongrel curs,
 Put you into a way at least
 To make yourself a better beast ?
 Can all your critical intrigues 45
 Of trying sound from rotten eggs ;
 Your sev'ral new-found remedies
 Of curing wounds and scabs in trees ;

Your arts of fluxing them for claps,
 And purging their infected saps ; 50
 Recov'ring shankers, chrystallines,
 And nodes and blotches in their rinds ;
 Have no effect to operate
 Upon that duller block, your pate ?
 But still it must be lewdly bent 55
 To tempt your own due punishment ;
 And, like your whimsy'd chariots, draw
 The boys to course you without law ;
 As if the art you have so long
 Profess'd, of making old dogs young, 60
 In you had virtue to renew
 Not only youth but childhood too.
 Can you, that understand all books,
 By judging only with your looks,
 Resolve all problems with your face, 65
 As others do with B's and A's ;
 Unriddle all that mankind knows
 With solid bending of your brows ;
 All arts and sciences advance
 With screwing of your countenance, 70
 And with a penetrating eye
 Into th' abstrusest learning pry ;
 Know more of any trade b' a hint
 Than those that have been bred up in 't,
 And yet have no art, true or false, 75
 To help your own bad naturals ?
 But still the more you strive t' appear
 Are found to be the wretcheder :
 For fools are known by looking wise,
 As men find woodcocks by their eyes. 80
 Hence 'tis that 'cause y' have gain'd o' th' college
 A quarter share (at most) of knowledge,

And brought in none, but spent repute,
 Y' assume a pow'r as absolute
 To judge, and censure, and control, 85
 As if you were the sole Sir Poll,
 And saucily pretend to know
 More than your dividend comes to.
 You'll find the thing will not be done
 With ignorance and face alone; 90
 No, though y' have purchas'd to your name
 In history so great a fame;
 That now your talent 's so well known
 For having all belief outgrown,
 That ev'ry strange prodigious tale 95
 Is measur'd by your German scale—
 By which the virtuosi try
 The magnitude of ev'ry lie,
 Cast up to what it does amount,
 And place the bigg'st to your account: 100
 That all those stories that are laid

⁸⁶ Sir Politic Would-be, in "Volpone."

⁹¹ ⁹² These two lines, I think, plainly discover that Lilly, and not Sir Paul Neal, was here lashed under the name of 'Sidrophel;' for Lilly's fame abroad was indisputable. Mr. Strickland, who was many years agent for the Parliament in Holland, thus publishes it: "I came purposely into the committee this day to see the man who is so famous in those parts where I have so long continued: I assure you his name is famous all over Europe. I came to do him justice." Lilly is also careful to tell us, that the King of Sweden sent him a gold chain and medal, worth about fifty pounds, for making honourable mention of his Majesty in one of his almanacks, which, he says, was translated into the language spoken at Hamburgh, and printed and cried about the streets, as it was in London. Thus he trumpets to the world the fame he acquired by his infamous practices, if we may credit his own history.

Too truly to you, and those made,
 Are now still charg'd upon your score,
 And lesser authors nam'd no more.
 Alas ! that faculty betrays 105
 Those soonest it designs to raise ;
 And all your vain renown will spoil,
 As guns o'ercharg'd the more recoil ;
 Though he that has but impudence
 To all things has a fair pretence ; 110
 And put among his wants but shame,
 To all the world may lay his claim :
 Though you have try'd that nothing 's borne
 With greater ease than public scorn,
 That all affronts do still give place 115
 To your impenetrable face ;
 That makes your way through all affairs,
 As pigs through hedges creep with theirs :
 Yet as 'tis counterfeit, and brass,
 You must not think 'twill always pass ; 120
 For all impostors, when they're known,
 Are past their labour and undone ;
 And all the best that can befall
 An artificial natural,
 Is that which madmen find as soon 125
 As once they're broke loose from the moon,
 And, proof against her influence,
 Relapse to e'er so little sense,
 To turn stark fools, and subjects fit
 For sport of boys and rabble-wit. 130

PART III. CANTO I.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Knight and Squire resolve at once,
 The one the other to renounce ;
 They both approach the Lady's bower,
 The Squire t' inform, the Knight to woo her.
 She treats them with a masquerade,
 By Furies and Hobgoblins made ;
 From which the Squire conveys the Knight,
 And steals him from himself by night.

'Tis true no lover has that pow'r
 T' enforce a desperate amour,
 As he that has two strings t' his bow,
 And burns for love and money too ;
 For then he 's brave and resolute, 5
 Disdains to render in his suit ;
 Has all his flames and raptures double,
 And hangs or drowns with half the trouble ;
 While those who sillily pursue
 The simple downright way and true, 10
 Make as unlucky applications,
 And steer against the stream, their passions.
 Some forge their mistresses of stars,
 And when the ladies prove averse,
 And more untoward to be won 15
 Than by Caligula the moon,
 Cry out upon the stars for doing
 Ill offices, to cross their wooing,
 When only by themselves they're hind'red,

For trusting those they made her kindred, 20
 And still the harsher and hide-bounder
 The damsels prove, become the fonder;
 For what mad lover ever dy'd
 To gain a soft and gentle bride?
 Or for a lady tender-hearted, 25
 In purling streams or hemp departed?
 Leap'd headlong int' Elysium,
 Through th' windows of a dazzling room?
 But for some cross ill-natur'd dame,
 The am'rous fly burnt in his flame. 30
 This to the Knight could be no news,
 With all mankind so much in use,
 Who therefore took the wiser course,
 To make the most of his amours,
 Resolv'd to try all sorts of ways, 35
 As follows in due time and place.

No sooner was the bloody fight
 Between the Wizard and the Knight,
 With all th' appurtenances, over,
 But he relaps'd again t' a lover, 40
 As he was always wont to do
 When h' had discomfited a foe,
 And us'd the only antique philters
 Deriv'd from old heroic tilters.
 But now triumphant and victorious, 45
 He held th' achievement was too glorious
 For such a conqueror to meddle
 With petty constable or beadle,
 Or fly for refuge to the hostess
 Of th' inns of Court and Chancery, Justice; 50
 Who might perhaps reduce his cause

To th' ordeal trial of the laws,
 Where none escape but such as branded
 With red-hot irons have past bare-handed ;
 And, if they cannot read one verse 55
 I' th' Psalms, must sing it, and that's worse.
 He, therefore, judging it below him
 To tempt a shame the dev'l might owe him,
 Resolv'd to leave the Squire for bail
 And mainprize for him to the jail, 60
 To answer, with his vessel all
 That might disastrously befall,
 And thought it now the fittest juncture
 To give the Lady a rencounter,
 T' acquaint her with his expedition, 65
 And conquest o'er the fierce magician ;
 Describe the manner of the fray,
 And shew the spoils he brought away ;
 His bloody-scourging aggravate,
 The number of the blows, and weight ; 70
 All which might probably succeed,
 And gain belief he 'ad done the deed :
 Which he resolv'd t' enforce, and spare
 No pawning of his soul to swear ;
 But rather than produce his back, 75
 To set his conscience on the rack ;
 And, in pursuance of his urging
 Of articles perform'd, and scourging,
 And all things else, upon his part
 Demand deliv'ry of her heart, 80
 Her goods, and chattels, and good graces,
 And person, up to his embraces.
 Thought he, The ancient errant knights
 Won all their ladies' hearts in fights,
 And cut whole giants into fritters, 85

To put them into am'rous twitters ;
 Whose stubborn bowels scorn'd to yield,
 Until their gallants were half kill'd ;
 But when their bones were drubb'd so sore,
 They durst not woo one combat more, 90
 The ladies' hearts began to melt,
 Subdu'd by blows their lovers felt.
 So Spanish heroes with their lances,
 At once wound bulls and ladies' fancies ;
 And he acquires the noblest spouse 95
 That widows greatest herds of cows ;
 Then what may I expect to do,
 Wh' have quell'd so vast a buffalo ?
 Meanwhile the Squire was on his way,
 The Knight's late orders to obey ; 100
 Who sent him for a strong detachment
 Of beadles, constables, and watchmen,
 T' attack the cunning-man, for plunder
 Committed falsely on his lumber ;
 When he who had so lately sack'd 105
 The enemy, had done the fact ;
 Had rifled all his pokes and fobs
 Of gimcracks, whims, and jiggumbobs,
 Which he by hook or crook had gather'd,
 And for his own inventions father'd ; 110
 And when they should, at gaol delivery,
 Unriddle one another's thievery,
 Both might have evidence enough
 To render neither halter-proof :
 He thought it desperate to tarry, 115
 And venture to be accessory ;
 But rather wisely slip his fetters,
 And leave them for the Knight, his betters.
 He call'd to mind th' unjust foul play,

He would have offer'd him that day, 120
To make him curry his own hide,
Which no beast ever did beside
Without all possible evasion,
But of the riding dispensation :
And therefore much about the hour 125
The Knight (for reasons told before)
Resolv'd to leave him to the fury
Of Justice, and an unpack'd jury,
The Squire concurr'd t' abandon him,
And serve him in the self-same trim ; 130
T' acquaint the Lady what h' had done,
And what he meant to carry on ;
What project 'twas he went about,
When Sidrophel and he fell out :
His firm and steadfast resolution, 135
To swear her to an execution ;
To pawn his inward ears to marry her,
And bribe the devil himself to carry her ;
In which both dealt, as if they meant
Their party-saints to represent, 140
Who never fail'd upon their sharing
In any prosperous arms-bearing,
To lay themselves out, to supplant
Each other cousin-german saint.
But ere the Knight could do his part, 145
The Squire had got so much the start,
H' had to the Lady done his errand,
And told her all his tricks aforehand.
Just as he finish'd his report,
The Knight alighted in the court, 150
And having ty'd his beast t' a pale,
And taking time for both to stale,
He put his band and beard in order,

The sprucer to accost and board her :
 And now began t' approach the door, 155
 When she, wh' had spy'd him out before,
 Convey'd th' informer out of sight,
 And went to entertain the Knight ;
 With whom encount'ring, after longees
 Of humble and submissive congees, 160
 And all due ceremonies paid,
 He strok'd his beard, and thus he said :

Madam, I do, as is my duty,
 Honour the shadow of your shoe-tye ;
 And now am come to bring your ear 165
 A present you'll be glad to hear ;
 At least I hope so : the thing 's done,
 Or may I never see the sun ;
 For which I humbly now demand
 Performance at your gentle hand ; 170
 And that you 'd please to do your part
 As I have done mine, to my smart.

With that he shrugg'd his sturdy back,
 As if he felt his shoulders ake :
 But she, who well enough knew what 175
 (Before he spoke) he would be at,
 Pretended not to apprehend
 The mystery of what he mean'd.
 And therefore wish'd him to expound
 His dark expressions less profound. 180

Madam, quoth he, I come to prove
 How much I've suffer'd for your love,
 Which (like your votary) to win,
 I have not spar'd my tatter'd skin :
 And, for those meritorious lashes, 185
 To claim your favour and good graces.

Quoth she, I do remember once

I freed you from th' enchanted sconce,
 And that you promis'd for that favour
 To bind your back to th' good behaviour; 190
 And, for my sake and service, vow'd
 To lay upon 't a heavy load,
 And what 't would bear t' a scruple prove,
 As other knights do oft make love;
 Which, whether you have done or no, 195
 Concerns yourself, not me, to know;
 But if you have, I shall confess
 Y' are honestest than I could guess.

Quoth he, If you suspect my troth,
 I cannot prove it but by oath; 200
 And if you make a question on 't,
 I'll pawn my soul that I have done 't:
 And he that makes his soul his surety,
 I think, does give the best security.

Quoth she, Some say the soul's secure 205
 Against distress and forfeiture;
 Is free from action, and exempt
 From execution and contempt;
 And to be summon'd to appear
 In th' other world's illegal here, 210
 And therefore few make any account
 Int' what incumbrances they run 't;
 For most men carry things so even
 Between this world, and hell, and heaven,
 Without the least offence to either, 215
 They freely deal in all together,
 And equally abhor to quit
 This world for both, or both for it;
 And when they pawn and damn their souls,
 They are but pris'ners on paroles. 220

For that, quoth he, 'tis rational,

They may b' accomptable in all :
 For when there is that intercourse
 Between divine and human pow'rs,
 That all that we determine here 225
 Commands obedience every-where ;
 When penalties may be commuted
 For fines, or ears, and executed,
 It follows nothing binds so fast
 As souls in pawn and mortgage past ; 230
 For oaths are th' only tests and seals
 Of right and wrong, and true and false ;
 And there 's no other way to try
 The doubts of law and justice by.

Quoth she, What is it you would swear ? 235
 There 's no believing till I hear :
 For till they 're understood, all tales
 (Like nonsense) are not true nor false.

Quoth he, When I resolv'd t' obey
 What you commanded th' other day, 240
 And to perform my exercise
 (As schools are wont) for your fair eyes,
 T' avoid all scruples in the case,
 I went to do 't upon the place ;
 But as the castle is enchanted 245
 By Sidrophel the witch, and haunted
 With evil spirits, as you know,
 Who took my Squire and me for two,
 Before I 'ad hardly time to lay
 My weapons by, and disarray, 250
 I heard a formidable noise,
 Loud as the Stentrophonic voice,
 That roar'd far off, Dispatch, and strip,
 I 'm ready with th' infernal whip,
 That shall divest thy ribs of skin, 255

To expiate thy ling'ring sin ;
Th' hast broke perfidiously thy oath,
And not perform'd thy plighted troth,
But spar'd thy renegado back,
Where th' hadst so great a prize at stake, 260
Which now the Fates have order'd me,
For penance and revenge to flee,
Unless thou presently make haste ;
Time is, time was : and there it ceast.
With which, though startled, I confess, 265
Yet th' horror of the thing was less
Than th' other dismal apprehension
Of interruption or prevention ;
And therefore snatching up the rod,
I laid upon my back a load, 270
Resolv'd to spare no flesh and blood,
To make my word and honour good :
Till tir'd, and taking truce at length,
For new recruits of breath and strength,
I felt the blows still ply'd as fast 275
As if th' had been by lovers plac'd
In raptures of Platonic lashing,
And chaste contemplative bardashing ;
When facing hastily about,
To stand upon my guard and scout, 280
I found th' infernal cunning-man,
And th' under-witch, his Caliban,
With scourges (like the Furies) arm'd,
That on my outward quarters storm'd.
In haste I snatch'd my weapon up, 285
And gave their hellish rage a stop ;
Call'd thrice upon your name, and fell
Courageously on Sidrophel ;
Who now transform'd himself t' a bear,

Began to roar aloud and tear ; 290
 When I as furiously press'd on,
 My weapon down his throat to run,
 Laid hold on him, but he broke loose,
 And turn'd himself into a goose,
 Div'd under water in a pond, 295
 To hide himself from being found.
 In vain I sought him ; but as soon
 As I perceiv'd him fled and gone,
 Prepar'd, with equal haste and rage,
 His under-sorcerer t' engage ; 300
 But bravely scorning to defile
 My sword with feeble blood, and vile,
 I judg'd it better from a quick-
 Set hedge to cut a knotted stick ;
 With which I furiously laid on, 305
 Till in a harsh and doleful tone
 It roar'd, O hold, for pity, Sir !
 I am too great a sufferer,
 Abus'd, as you have been, b' a witch,
 But conjur'd into a worse caprich : 310
 Who sends me out on many a jaunt,
 Old houses in the night to haunt,
 For opportunities t' improve
 Designs of thievery or love ;
 With drugs convey'd in drink or meat, 315
 All feats of witches counterfeit,
 Kill pigs and geese with powder'd glass,
 And make it for enchantment pass ;
 With cow-itch measles like a leper,
 And choke with fumes of Guiney-pepper ; 320
 Make lechers, and their punks, with dewtry,
 Commit phantastical advowtry ;
 Bewitch Hermetic-men to run

Stark staring mad with manicon ;
 Believe mechanic virtuosi 325
 Can raise them mountains in Potosi ;
 And, sillier than the antic fools,
 Take treasure for a heap of coals ;
 Seek out for plants with signatures,
 To quack off universal cures ; 330
 With figures ground on panes of glass,
 Make people on their heads to pass ;
 And mighty heaps of coin increase,
 Reflected from a single piece ;
 To draw in fools, whose nat'ral itches 335
 Incline perpetually to witches,
 And keep me in continual fears,
 And danger of my neck and ears ;
 When less delinquents have been scourg'd,
 And hemp on wooden anvils forg'd, 340
 Which others for cravats have worn
 About their necks, and took a turn.
 I pity'd the sad punishment
 The wretched caitiff underwent,
 And held my drubbing of his bones 345
 Too great an honour for pultrons ;
 For knights are bound to feel no blows
 From paltry and unequal foes,
 Who, when they slash and cut to pieces,
 Do all with civilest addresses : 350
 Their horses never give a blow,
 But when they make a leg and bow.
 I therefore spar'd his flesh, and prest him
 About the witch with many a question.
 Quoth he, For many years he drove 355
 A kind of broking-trade in love :
 Employ'd in all th' intrigues and trust,

Of feeble speculative lust ;
 Procurer to th' extravagancy
 And crazy ribaldry of fancy, 360
 By those the devil had forsook,
 As things below him, to provoke ;
 But b'ing a virtuoso, able
 To smatter, quack, and cant, and dabble,
 He held his talent most adroit, 365
 For any mystical exploit,
 As others of his tribe had done,
 And rais'd their prices three to one :
 For one predicting pimp has th' odds
 Of chaldrons of plain downright bawds, 370
 But as an elf (the dev'l's valet)
 Is not so slight a thing to get,
 For those that do his bus'ness best,
 In hell are us'd the ruggedest,
 Before so meriting a person 375
 Could get a grant, but in reversion,
 He serv'd two prenticeships, and longer,
 I' th' myst'ry of a lady-monger.
 For (as some write) a witch's ghost,
 As soon as from the body loos'd, 380
 Becomes a puiney imp itself,
 And is another witch's elf.
 He, after searching far and near,
 At length found one in Lancashire,
 With whom he bargain'd before-hand, 385
 And, after hanging, entertain'd :
 Since which h' has play'd a thousand feats,
 And practis'd all mechanic cheats ;
 Transform'd himself to th' ugly shapes
 Of wolves, and bears, baboons, and apes, 390
 Which he has vary'd more than witches,

Or Pharaoh's wizards, could their switches ;
 And all with whom h' has had to do,
 Turn'd to as monstrous figures too ;
 Witness myself, whom h' has abus'd, 395
 And to this beastly shape reduc'd,
 By feeding me on beans and pease
 He crams in nasty crevices,
 And turns to comfits by his arts,
 To make me relish for deserts, 400
 And one by one, with shame and fear,
 Lick up the candy'd provender.
 Beside—But as h' was running on,
 To tell what other feasts h' had done,
 The Lady stopt his full career, 405
 And told him now 'twas time to hear.
 If half those things (said she) be true—
 They 're all (quoth he), I swear by you :—
 Why then (said she) that Sidrophel
 Has damn'd himself to th' pit of hell, 410
 Who, mounted on a broom, the nag
 And hackney of a Lapland hag,
 In quest of you came hither post,
 Within an hour (I'm sure) at most,
 Who told me all you swear and say, 415
 Quite contrary another way ;
 Vow'd that you came to him, to know
 If you should carry me or no ;
 And would have hir'd him and his imps,
 To be your match-makers and pimps, 420
 T' engage the devil on your side,
 And steal (like Proserpine) your bride ;
 But he disdaining to embrace
 So filthy a design and base,
 You fell to vapouring and huffing, 425

And drew upon him like a ruffin ;
 Surpris'd him meanly, unprepar'd,
 Before h' had time to mount his guard,
 And left him dead upon the ground,
 With many a bruise and desp'rate wound : 430
 Swore you had broke and robb'd his house,
 And stole his talismanic louse,
 And all his new-found old inventions,
 With flat felonious-intentions ;
 Which he could bring out where he had, 435
 And what he bought them for, and paid :
 His flea, his morpion, and punese,
 H' had gotten for his proper ease,
 And all in perfect minutes made,
 By th' ablest artist of the trade ; 440
 Which (he could prove it) since he lost
 He has been eaten up almost ;
 And altogether might amount
 To many hundreds on account :
 For which h' had got sufficient warrant 445
 To seize the malefactors errant,
 Without capacity of bail,
 But of a cart's or horse's tail ;
 And did not doubt to bring the wretches
 To serve for pendulums to watches ; 450
 Which, modern virtuosis say,
 Incline to hanging every way.
 Beside, he swore, and swore 'twas true,
 That ere he went in quest of you,
 He set a figure to discover 455
 If you were fled to Rye or Dover ;
 And found it clear that, to betray
 Yourselves and me, you fled this way ;
 And that he was upon pursuit,

To take you somewhere hereabout. 460
 He vow'd he had intelligence
 Of all that pass'd before and since,
 And found that, ere you came to him,
 Y' had been engaging life and limb
 About a case of tender conscience, 465
 Where both abounded in your own sense,
 Till Ralpho, by his light and grace,
 Had clear'd all scruples in the case ;
 And prov'd that you might swear and own
 Whatever 's by the Wicked done ; 470
 For which, most basely to requite
 The service of his gifts and light,
 You strove t' oblige him, by main force,
 To scourge his ribs instead of yours ;
 But that he stood upon his guard, 475
 And all your vapouring out-dar'd ;
 For which, between you both, the feat
 Has never been perform'd as yet.

While thus the Lady talk'd, the Knight
 Turn'd th' outside of his eyes to white 480
 (As men of inward light are wont
 To turn their optics in upon 't) ;
 He wonder'd how she came to know
 What he had done, and meant to do :
 Held up his affidavit-hand, 485
 As if h' had been to be arraign'd ;
 Cast towards the door a ghastly look,
 In dread of Sidrophel, and spoke :

Madam, if but one word be true
 Of all the wizard has told you, 490
 Or but one single circumstance
 In all th' apocryphal romance,
 May dreadful earthquakes swallow down

This vessel, that is all your own ;
 Or may the heavens fall and cover 495
 These reliques of your constant lover.

You have provided well (quoth she),
 (I thank you) for yourself and me,
 And shewn your Presbyterian wits
 Jump punctual with the Jesuits' ; 500
 A most compendious way and civil,
 At once to cheat the world, the devil,
 And heaven and hell, yourselves, and those
 On whom you vainly think t' impose.
 Why then (quoth he), may hell surprise— 505
 That trick (said she) will not pass twice :
 I've learn'd how far I'm to believe
 Your pinning oaths upon your sleeve ;
 But there 's a better way of clearing
 What you would prove, than downright swearing ;
 For if you have perform'd the feat,
 The blows are visible as yet,
 Enough to serve for satisfaction
 Of nicest scruples in the action ;
 And if you can produce those knobs, 515
 Although they're but the witch's drubs,
 I'll pass them all upon account,
 As if your nat'ral self had done 't ;
 Provided that they pass th' opinion
 Of able juries of old women ; 520
 Who, us'd to judge all matter of facts
 For bellies, may do so for backs.

Madam (quoth he), your love 's a million,
 To do is less than to be willing,
 As I am, were it in my power 525
 T' obey what you command, and more ;
 But for performing what you bid,

I thank you as much as if I did.
 You know I ought to have a care
 To keep my wounds from taking air ; 530
 For wounds in those that are all heart,
 Are dangerous in any part.

I find (quoth she) my goods and chattels
 Are like to prove but mere drawn battles ;
 For still the longer we contend, 535
 We are but farther off the end ;
 But granting now we should agree,
 What is it you expect from me ?
 Your plighted faith (quoth he) and word
 You past in heaven on record, 540
 Where all contracts, to have and t' hold,
 Are everlastingly enroll'd ;
 And if 'tis counted treason here
 To raze records, 'tis much more there.

Quoth she, There are no bargains driv'n, 545
 Nor marriages clapp'd up in heav'n,
 And that 's the reason, as some guess,
 There is no heav'n in marriages ;
 Two things that naturally press
 Too narrowly to be at ease ; 550
 Their bus'ness there is only love,
 Which marriage is not like t' improve ;
 Love, that 's too generous t' abide
 To be against its nature ty'd ;
 For where 'tis of itself inclin'd, 555
 It breaks loose when it is confin'd,
 And like the soul, its harbourer,
 Debarr'd the freedom of the air,
 Disdains against its will to stay,
 But struggles out and flies away ; 560
 And therefore never can comply

T' endure the matrimonial tie,
 That binds the female and the male,
 Where th' one is but the other's bail ;
 Like Roman gaolers, when they slept 565
 Chain'd to the prisoners they kept.
 Of which the true and faithful'st lover,
 Gives best security to suffer.
 Marriage is but a beast some say,
 That carries double in foul way, 570
 And therefore 'tis not to b' admir'd
 It should so suddenly be tir'd :
 A bargain, at a venture made,
 Between two partners in a trade ;
 (For what 's inferr'd by t' have and t' hold, 575
 But something past away, and sold ?)
 That, as it makes but one of two,
 Reduces all things else as low ;
 And at the best is but a mart,
 Between the one and th' other part, 580
 That on the marriage-day is paid,
 Or hour of death, the bet is laid ;
 And all the rest of better or worse,
 Both are but losers out of purse :
 For when upon their ungot heirs 585
 Th' entail themselves, and all that 's theirs,
 What blinder bargain e'er was driv'n,
 Or wager laid at six and sev'n ?
 To pass themselves away, and turn
 Their children's tenants ere they're born ? 590
 Beg one another idiot
 To guardians, ere they are begot ;
 Or ever shall, perhaps, by th' one
 Who 's bound to vouch 'em for his own,
 Though got b' implicit generation, 595

And gen'ral club of all the nation ;
 For which she 's fortify'd no less
 Than all the island, with four seas ;
 Exacts the tribute of her dower,
 In ready insolence and power, 600
 And makes him pass away, to have
 And hold, to her, himself, her slave,
 More wretched than an ancient villain,
 Condemn'd to drudgery and tilling :
 While all he does upon the by, 605
 She is not bound to justify,
 Nor at her proper cost and charge
 Maintain the feats he does at large.
 Such hideous sots were those obedient
 Old vassals, to their ladies regent, 610
 To give the cheats the eldest hand
 In foul play, by the laws o' th' land ;
 For which so many a legal cuckold
 Has been run down in courts, and truckled :
 A law that most unjustly yokes 615
 All Johns of Stiles to Joans of Noakes,
 Without distinction of degree,
 Condition, age, or quality ;
 Admits no pow'r of revocation,
 Nor valuable consideration, 620
 Nor writ of Error, nor reverse
 Of judgment past, for better or worse ;
 Will not allow the privileges
 That beggars challenge under hedges,
 Who, when they're griev'd, can make dead horses
 Their sp'ritual judges of divorces,
 While nothing else but *rem in re*
 Can set the proudest wretches free ;
 A slavery beyond enduring,

But that 'tis of their own procuring. 630
 As spiders never seek the fly,
 But leave him of himself t' apply ;
 So men are by themselves employ'd,
 To quit the freedom they enjoy'd,
 And run their necks into a noose, 635
 They'd break 'em after to break loose.
 As some whom death would not depart,
 Have done the feat themselves by art :
 Like Indian widows, gone to bed,
 In flaming curtains, to the dead ; 640
 And men as often dangled for 't,
 And yet will never leave the sport.
 Nor do the ladies want excuse
 For all the stratagems they use,
 To gain th' advantage of the set, 645
 And lurch the amorous rook and cheat.
 For as the Pythagorean soul
 Runs through all beasts, and fish, and fowl,
 And has a smack of ev'ry one,
 So love does, and has ever done ; 650
 And therefore though 'tis ne'er so fond,
 Takes strangely to the vagabond.
 'Tis but an ague that 's reverst,
 Whose hot fit takes the patient first,
 That after burns with cold as much 655
 As iron in Greenland does the touch ;
 Melts in the furnace of desire
 Like glass, that 's but the ice of fire ;
 And when his heat of fancy's over,
 Becomes as hard and frail a lover : 660
 For when he 's with love-powder laden,
 And prim'd and cock'd by Miss or Madam,
 The smallest sparkle of an eye

Gives fire to his artillery,
 And off the loud oaths go, but, while 665
 They're in the very act, recoil :
 Hence 'tis so few dare take their chance
 Without a sep'rate maintenance ;
 And widows, who have try'd one lover,
 Trust none again till they've made over ; 670
 Or if they do, before they marry
 The foxes weigh the geese they carry ;
 And ere they venture o'er a stream,
 Know how to size themselves and them.
 Whence wittiest ladies always choose 675
 To undertake the heaviest goose :
 For now the world is grown so wary,
 That few of either sex dare marry,
 But rather trust on tick t' amours,
 The cross and pile for bett'r or worse ; 680
 A mode that is held honourable
 As well as French and fashionable :
 For when it falls out for the best,
 Where both are incommoded least,
 In soul and body two unite 685
 To make up one hermaphrodite ;
 Still amorous, and fond, and billing,
 Like Philip and Mary on a shilling,
 They've more punctilios and caprices
 Between the petticoat and breeches ; 690
 More petulant extravagances
 Than poets make 'em in romances ;
 Though when their heroes 'spouse the dames,
 We hear no more of charms and flames ;
 For then their late attracts decline 695
 And turn as eager as prick'd wine ;
 And all their caterwauling tricks,

In earnest to as jealous piques :
 Which th' ancients wisely signify'd
 By th' yellow manteaus of the bride ; 700
 For jealousy is but a kind
 Of clap and grincam of the mind,
 The natural effects of love,
 As other flames and aches prove :
 But all the mischief is the doubt 705
 On whose account they first broke out.
 For though Chinesees go to bed
 And lie-in, in their ladies' stead ;
 And, for the pains they took before,
 Are nurs'd and pamper'd to do more ; 710
 Our green-men do it worse, when th' hap
 To fall in labour of a clap ;
 Both lay the child to one another,
 But who 's the father ? who the mother ?
 'Tis hard to say in multitudes, 715
 Or who imported the French goods.
 But health and sickness b'ing all one,
 Which both engag'd before to own,
 And are not with their bodies bound
 To worship, only when they're sound ; 720
 Both give and take their equal shares
 Of all they suffer by false wares ;
 A fate no lover can divert
 With all his caution, wit, and art :
 For 'tis in vain to think to guess 725
 At women by appearances ;
 That paint and patch their imperfections,
 Of intellectual complexions,
 And daub their tempers o'er with washes
 As artificial as their faces : 730
 Wear, under vizard-masks, their talents

And mother-wits, before their gallants ;
 Until they're hamper'd in the noose,
 Too fast to dream of breaking loose :
 When all the flaws they strove to hide 735
 Are made unready with the bride,
 That with her wedding-clothes undresses
 Her complaisance and gentileesses ;
 Tries all her arts to take upon her
 The government from th' easy owner ; 740
 Until the wretch is glad to wave
 His lawful right, and turn her slave ;
 Find all his having and his holding
 Reduc'd t' eternal noise and scolding ;
 The conjugal petard, that tears 745
 Down all portcullices of ears,
 And makes the volley of one tongue
 For all their leathern shields too strong.
 When only arm'd with noise and nails,
 The female silk-worms ride the males ; 750
 Transform 'em into rams and goats
 Like Syrens, with their charming notes ;
 Sweet as a screech-owl's serenade,
 Or those enchanting murmurs made
 By th' husband mandrake, and the wife, 755
 Both bury'd (like themselves) alive.

Quoth he, These reasons are but strains
 Of wanton, over-heated brains,
 Which ralliers in their wit or drink
 Do rather wheedle with than think. 760
 Man was not man in Paradise,
 Until he was created twice ;
 And had his better half, his bride,
 Carv'd from th' original, his side,
 T' amend his natural defects, 765

And perfect his recruiting sex ;
 Enlarge his breed at once, and lessen
 The pains and labour of increasing,
 By changing them for other cares,
 As by his dried-up paps appears. 770
 His body, that stupendous frame,
 Of all the world the anagram,
 Is of two equal parts compact,
 In shape and symmetry exact ;
 Of which the left and female side 775
 Is to the manly right a bride ;
 Both join'd together with such art,
 That nothing else but death can part.
 Those heav'nly attracts of yours, your eyes,
 And face, that all the world surprise, 780
 That dazzle all that look upon ye,
 And scorch all other ladies tawny ;
 Those ravishing and charming graces,
 Are all made up of two half-faces,
 That, in a mathematic line, 785
 Like those in other heavens, join :
 Of which, if either grew alone,
 'Twould fright as much to look upon :
 And so would that sweet bud, your lip,
 Without the other's fellowship. 790
 Our noblest senses act by pairs,
 Two eyes to see ; to hear, two ears ;
 Th' intelligencers of the mind,
 To wait upon the soul design'd :
 But those that serve the body' alone 795
 Are single and confin'd to one.
 The world is but two parts, that meet
 And close at th' equinoctial fit ;
 And so are all the works of Nature,

Stamp'd with her signature on matter ; 800
Which all her creatures, to a leaf,
Or smallest blade of grass, receive.
All which sufficiently declare
How entirely marriage is her care,
The only method that she uses 805
In all the wonders she produces ;
And those that take their rules from her
Can never be deceiv'd, nor err :
For what secures the civil life,
But pawns of children, and a wife ? 810
That lie, like hostages, at stake,
To pay for all men undertake ;
To whom it is as necessary,
As to be born and breathe, to marry ;
So universal, all mankind 815
In nothing else is of one mind ;
For in what stupid age or nation
Was marriage ever out of fashion ?
Unless among the Amazons,
Or cloister'd Friars and Vestal nuns, 820
Or Stoics, who, to bar the freaks
And loose excesses of the sex,
Prepost'rously would have all women
Turn'd up to all the world in common.
Though men would find such mortal feuds 825
In sharing of their public goods,
'Twould put them to more charge of lives
Than they 're supply'd with now by wives,
Until they graze, and wear their clothes,
As beasts do, of their native growths ; 830
For simple wearing of their horns
Will not suffice to serve their turns.
For what can we pretend t' inherit,

Unless the marriage-deed will bear it ?
 Could claim no right to lands or rents, 835
 But for our parents' settlements ;
 Had been but younger sons o' th' earth
 Debarr'd it all, but for our birth.
 What honours, or estates of peers,
 Could be preserv'd but by their heirs ? 840
 And what security maintains
 Their right and title, but the banns ?
 What crowns could be hereditary,
 If greatest monarchs did not marry,
 And with their consorts consummate 845
 Their weightiest interests of state ?
 For all th' amours of princes are
 But guarantees of peace or war.
 Or what but marriage has a charm,
 The rage of empires to disarm ? 850
 Make blood and desolation cease,
 And fire and sword unite in peace ;
 When all their fierce contests for forage
 Conclude in articles of marriage.
 Nor does the genial bed provide 855
 Less for the int'rests of the bride,
 Who else had not the least pretence
 T' as much as due benevolence ;
 Could no more title take upon her
 To virtue, quality, and honour, 860
 Than ladies errant unconfi'd,
 And feme-coverts to all mankind.
 All women would be of one piece,
 The virtuous matron, and the miss ;
 The nymphs of chaste Diana's train, 865
 The same with those in Lewkner's lane ;
 But for the diff'rence marriage makes

'Twixt wives and ladies of the Lakes :
Besides the joys of place and birth,
The sex's paradise on earth, 870
A privilege so sacred held
That none will to their mothers yield,
But, rather than not go before,
Abandon heaven at the door :
And if th' indulgent law allows 875
A greater freedom to the spouse,
The reason is, because the wife
Runs greater hazards of her life ;
Is trusted with the form and matter
Of all mankind by careful Nature ; 880
Where man brings nothing but the stuff
She frames the wondrous fabric of ;
Who therefore, in a strait, may freely
Demand the clergy of her belly ;
And make it save her the same way 885
It seldom misses to betray,
Unless both parties wisely enter
Into the Liturgy indenture.
And though some fits of small contest
Sometimes fall out among the best, 890
That is no more than every lover
Does from his hackney-lady suffer ;
That makes no breach of faith and love,
But rather sometimes serves t' improve :
For as, in running, every pace 895
Is but between two legs a race,
In which both do their uttermost
To get before and win the post,
Yet, when they're at their races' ends,
They're still as kind and constant friends, 900
And, to relieve their weariness,

By turns give one another ease ;
 So all those false alarms of strife
 Between the husband and the wife,
 And little quarrels, often prove 905
 To be but new recruits of love,
 When those who 're always kind or coy
 In time must either tire or cloy.
 Nor are the loudest clamours more
 Than as they're relish'd sweet or sour ; 910
 Like music, that proves bad or good
 According as 'tis understood.
 In all amours a lover burns
 With frowns, as well as smiles, by turns ;
 And hearts have been as oft with sullen 915
 As charming looks surpris'd and stolen :
 Then why should more bewitching clamour
 Some lovers not as much enamour ?
 For discords make the sweetest airs,
 And curses are a kind of pray'rs ; 920
 Two slight alloys for all those grand
 Felicities by marriage gain'd :
 For nothing else has power to settle
 The interests of love perpetual.
 An act and deed that makes one heart 925
 Become another's counter-part,
 And passes fines on faith and love,
 Inroll'd and register'd above,
 To seal the slippery knots of vows,
 Which nothing else but death can loose. 930
 And what security 's too strong
 To guard that gentle heart from wrong
 That to its friend is glad to pass
 Itself away and all it has,
 And, like an anchorite, gives over 935

This world for th' heaven of a lover ?

I grant (quoth she) there are some few
 Who take that course, and find it true,
 But millions whom the same does sentence
 To heav'n b' another way, repentance. 940
 Love's arrows are but shot at rovers,
 Though all they hit they turn to lovers,
 And all the weighty consequents
 Depend upon more blind events
 Than gamesters, when they play a set 945
 With greatest cunning at Piquet,
 Put out with caution, but take in
 They know not what, unsight unseen.
 For what do lovers, when they're fast
 In one another's arms embrac'd, 950
 But strive to plunder, and convey
 Each other, like a prize, away ?
 To change the property of selves,
 As sucking children are by elves ?
 And if they use their persons so, 955
 What will they to their fortunes do ?
 Their fortunes ! the perpetual aims
 Of all their ecstasies and flames.
 For when the money 's on the book,
 And ' All my worldly goods' but spoke 960
 (The formal livery and seisin
 That puts a lover in possession),
 To that alone the bridegroom's wedded,
 The bride a flam that 's superseded :
 To that their faith is still made good, 965
 And all the oaths to us they vow'd ;
 For when we once resign our pow'rs,
 We've nothing left we can call ours ;
 Our money 's now become the Miss

Of all your lives and services, 970
 And we, forsaken and postpon'd,
 But bawds to what before we own'd ;
 Which, as it made y' at first gallant us,
 So now hires others to supplant us,
 Until 'tis all turn'd out of doors 975
 (As we had been) for new amours.
 For what did ever heiress yet,
 By being born to lordships, get ?
 When, the more lady she 's of manors,
 She's but expos'd to more trepanners, 980
 Pays for their projects and designs,
 And for her own destruction fines ;
 And does but tempt them with her riches,
 To use her as the dev'l does witches,
 Who takes it for a special grace 985
 To be their cully for a space,
 That, when the time's expir'd, the drazels
 For ever may become his vassals ;
 So she, bewitch'd by rooks and spirits,
 Betrays herself and all sh' inherits ; 990
 Is bought and sold, like stolen goods,
 By pimps, and match-makers, and bawds ;
 Until they force her to convey
 And steal the thief himself away.
 These are the everlasting fruits 995
 Of all your passionate love-suits,
 Th' effects of all your am'rous fancies
 To portions and inheritances ;
 Your love-sick rapture, for fruition
 Of dowry, jointure, and tuition ; 1000
 To which you make address and courtship,
 And with your bodies strive to worship,
 That th' infant's fortunes may partake

Of love too for the mother's sake.
 For these you play at purposes, 1005
 And love your loves with A's and B's ;
 For these at Beste and L'Ombre woo,
 And play for love and money too :
 Strive who shall be the ablest man
 At right gallanting of a fan ; 1010
 And who the most genteelly bred
 At sucking of a vizard-bead ;
 How best t' accost us in all quarters,
 T' our question-and-command new garters ;
 And solidly discourse upon 1015
 All sorts of dresses *pro* and *con* :
 For there 's no mystery nor trade
 But in the art of love is made ;
 And when you have more debts to pay
 Than Michaelmas and Lady-day, 1020
 And no way possible to do 't
 But love and oaths, and restless suit,
 To us y' apply to pay the scores
 Of all your cully'd past amours ;
 Act o'er your flames and darts again, 1025
 And charge us with your wounds and pain,
 Which others' influences long since
 Have charm'd your noses with and shins,
 For which the surgeon is unpaid,
 And like to be without our aid. 1030
 Lord ! what an am'rous thing is want !
 How debts and mortgages inchant !
 What graces must that lady have
 That can from executions save !
 What charms that can reverse extent, 1035
 And null decree and exigent !
 What magical attracts and graces

That can redeem from *Scire facias*,
 From bonds and statutes can discharge,
 And from contempts of courts enlarge ! 1040
 These are the highest excellences
 Of all your true or false pretences ;
 And you would damn yourselves, and swear
 As much t' an hostess dowager,
 Grown fat and pury by retail 1045
 Of pots of beer and bottled ale,
 And find her fitter for your turn,
 For fat is wondrous apt to burn ;
 Who at your flames would soon take fire,
 Relent and melt to your desire, 1050
 And, like a candle in the sockét,
 Dissolve her graces int' your pocket.

By this time 'twas grown dark and late,
 When they' heard a knocking at the gate,
 Laid on in haste, with such a powder, 1055
 The blows grew louder still and louder ;
 Which Hudibras, as if they 'd been
 Bestow'd as freely on his skin,
 Expounding by his inward light,
 Or rather more prophetic fright, 1060
 To be the Wizard come to search,
 And take him napping in the lurch,

1053 1054 The persons who knocked at the gate were, probably, two of the lady's own servants: for as she and Ralpho (who all the time lay in ambuscade) had been descanting on the Knight's villanies, so they had undoubtedly laid this scheme to be revenged of him: the servants were disguised, and acted in a bold and hectoring manner, pursuant to the instructions given them by the Widow. The Knight was to be made believe they were Sidrophel and Whachum, which made his fright and consternation so great that we find him falling into a swoon.

Turn'd pale as ashes or a clout,
 But why or wherefore is a doubt ;
 For men will tremble, and turn paler, 1065
 With too much or too little valour.
 His heart laid on, as if it try'd
 To force a passage through his side,
 Impatient (as he vow'd) to wait 'em,
 But in a fury to fly at 'em ; 1070
 And therefore beat and laid about,
 To find a cranny to creep out.
 But she, who saw in what a taking
 The Knight was by his furious quaking,
 Undaunted cry'd, Courage, Sir Knight, 1075
 Know I'm resolv'd to break no rite
 Of hospital'ty to a stranger,
 But, to secure you out of danger,
 Will here myself stand sentinel
 To guard this pass 'gainst Sidrophel. 1080
 Women, you know, do seldom fail
 To make the stoutest men turn tail,
 And bravely scorn to turn their backs
 Upon the desp'ratest attacks.
 At this the Knight grew resolute 1085
 As Ironside or Hardiknute ;
 His fortitude began to rally,
 And out he cry'd aloud to sally :
 But she besought him to convey
 His courage rather out o' th' way, 1090
 And lodge in ambush on the floor,
 Or fortify'd behind a door,
 That, if the enemy should enter,

¹⁰⁶⁶ Two famous and valiant princes of this country, the one a Saxon, the other a Dane.

He might relieve her in th' adventure.

Meanwhile they knock'd against the door 1095
 As fierce as at the gate before ;
 Which made the renegado Knight
 Relapse again t' his former fright.
 He thought it desperate to stay
 Till th' enemy had forc'd his way, 1100
 But rather post himself, to serve
 The Lady for a fresh reserve.
 His duty was not to dispute,
 But what sh' had order'd execute ;
 Which he resolv'd in haste t' obey, 1105
 And therefore stoutly march'd away,
 And all h' encounter'd fell upon,
 Though in the dark, and all alone ;
 Till fear, that braver feats performs
 Than ever courage dar'd in arms, 1110
 Had drawn him up before a pass,
 To stand upon his guard, and face :
 This he courageously invaded,
 And, having enter'd, barricaded ;
 Insconc'd himself as formidable 1115
 As could be underneath a table,
 Where he lay down in ambush close,
 T' expect th' arrival of his foes.
 Few minutes he had lain perdue,
 To guard his desp'rate avenue, 1120
 Before he heard a dreadful shout,
 As loud as putting to the rout,
 With which impatiently alarm'd,
 He fancy'd th' enemy had storm'd,
 And, after ent'ring, Sidrophel 1125
 Was fall'n upon the guards pell-mell :
 He therefore sent out all his senses

To bring him in intelligences,
Which vulgars, out of ignorance,
Mistake for falling in a trance ; 1130
But those that trade in geomancy
Affirm to be the strength of fancy,
In which the Lapland Magi deal,
And things incredible reveal.

Meanwhile the foe beat up his quarters, 1135
And storm'd the outworks of his fortress ;
And as another of the same

Degree and party in arms and fame,
That in the same cause had engag'd,
And war with equal conduct wag'd, 1140

By vent'ring only but to thrust
His head a span beyond his post,
B' a general of the Cavaliers
Was dragg'd through a window by the ears ;
So he was serv'd in his redoubt, 1145
And by the other end pull'd out.

Soon as they had him at their mercy,
They put him to the cudgel fiercely,
As if they'd scorn'd to trade or barter,
By giving or by taking quarter ; 1150

They stoutly on his quarters laid,
Until his scouts came in t' his aid :

For when a man is past his sense,
There 's no way to reduce him thence
But twinging him by th' ears or nose, 1155

Or laying on of heavy blows ;
And, if that will not do the deed,
To burning with hot irons proceed.

No sooner was he come t' himself,
But on his neck a sturdy elf 1160
Clapp'd, in a trice, his cloven hoof,

And thus attack'd him with reproof:

Mortal, thou art betray'd to us
 B' our friend, thy evil genius,
 Who, for thy horrid perjuries, 1165
 Thy breach of faith, and turning lies,
 The Brethren's privilege (against
 The Wicked), on themselves, the Saints,
 Has here thy wretched carcase sent
 For just revenge and punishment, 1170
 Which thou hast now no way to lessen
 But by an open free confession ;
 For if we catch thee failing once,
 'Twill fall the heavier on thy bones.

What made thee venture to betray 1175
 And filch the Lady's heart away,
 To spirit her to matrimony?—
 That which contracts all matches, money.
 It was th' enchantment of her riches
 That made m' apply t' your crony witches ; 1180
 That in return would pay th' expense,
 The wear and tear of conscience,
 Which I could have patch'd up and turn'd
 For th' hundredth part of what I earn'd.—

Didst thou not love her then ? speak true.—
 No more (quoth he) than I love you.—
 How would'st thou 'ave us'd her and her money?—
 First turn'd her up to alimony,
 And laid her dowry out in law
 To null her jointure with a flaw, 1190
 Which I beforehand had agreed
 T' have put on purpose in the deed,
 And bar her widow's making over
 T' a friend in trust, or private lover.—

What made thee pick and choose her out 1195

T' employ their sorceries about?—
 That which makes gamesters play with those
 Who have least wit, and most to lose.—
 But didst thou scourge thy vessel thus,
 As thou hast damn'd thyself to us?— 1200

I see you take me for an ass :
 'Tis true, I thought the trick would pass
 Upon a woman well enough,
 As 't has been often found by proof,
 Whose humours are not to be won 1205
 But when they are impos'd upon ;
 For Love approves of all they do
 That stand for candidates, and woo.—

Why didst thou forge those shameful lies
 Of bears and witches in disguise?— 1210

That is no more than authors give
 The rabble credit to believe ;
 A trick of following their leaders
 To entertain their gentle readers :
 And we have now no other way 1215
 Of passing all we do or say ;
 Which, when 'tis natural and true,
 Will be believ'd b' a very few,
 Beside the danger of offence,
 The fatal enemy of sense.— 1220

Why didst thou choose that cursed sin,
 Hypocrisy, to set up in?—

Because it is the thriving'st calling,
 The only saints'-bell that rings all in ;
 In which all Churches are concern'd, 1225
 And is the easiest to be learn'd :
 For no degrees, unless they employ 't,
 Can ever gain much or enjoy 't :
 A gift that is not only able

To domineer among the rabble, 1230
 But by the laws impower'd to rout
 And awe the greatest that stand out ;
 Which few hold forth against, for fear
 Their hands should slip and come too near ;
 For no sin else, among the Saints, 1235
 Is taught so tenderly against.—

What made thee break thy plighted vows ?—
 That which makes others break a house,
 And hang, and scorn you all, before
 Endure the plague of being poor. 1240

Quoth he, I see you have more tricks
 Than all our doting politics,
 That are grown old and out of fashion,
 Compar'd with your new Reformation ;
 That we must come to school to you 1245
 To learn your more refin'd and new.

Quoth he, If you will give me leave
 To tell you what I now perceive,
 You'll find yourself an errant chouse
 If y' were but at a Meeting-house. 1250

'Tis true (quoth he), we ne'er come there,
 Because w' have let 'em out by th' year.

Truly (quoth he), you can't imagine
 What wondrous things they will engage in ;
 That as your fellow fiends in hell 1255
 Were angels all before they fell,
 So are you like to be agen
 Compar'd with th' angels of us men.

Quoth he, I am resolv'd to be
 Thy scholar in this mystery ; 1260
 And therefore first desire to know
 Some principles on which you go.

What makes a knave a child of God,

- And one of us ?—A livelihood.—
 What renders beating out of brains 1265
 And murder godliness ?—Great gains.
 What 's tender conscience ?—'Tis a botch
 That will not bear the gentlest touch ;
 But, breaking out, dispatches more
 Than th' epidemical'st plague-sore. 1270
 What makes y' incroach upon our trade,
 And damn all others ?—To be paid.—
 What 's orthodox and true believing
 Against a conscience ?—A good living.
 What makes rebelling against kings 1275
 A good old Cause ?—Administ'rings.
 What makes all doctrines plain and clear ?—
 About two hundred pounds a-year.
 And that which was prov'd true before
 Prove false again ?—Two hundred more. 1280
 What makes the breaking of all oaths
 A holy duty ?—Food and clothes.
 What laws and freedom persecution ?—
 B'ing out of power and contribution.
 What makes a church a den of thieves ?— 1285
 A dean and Chapter and white sleeves.
 And what would serve, if those were gone,
 To make it orthodox ?—Our own.
 What makes morality a crime
 The most notorious of the time ; 1290
 Morality, which both the Saints
 And Wicked too cry out against ?—
 'Cause grace and virtue are within
 Prohibited degrees of kin ;
 And therefore no true Saint allows 1295
 They shall be suffer'd to espouse ;
 For Saints can need no conscience

That with morality dispense ;
 As virtue 's impious when 'tis rooted
 In nature only, and not imputed : 1300
 But why the Wicked should do so
 We neither know, nor care to do.

What's liberty of conscience,
 I' th' natural and genuine sense?—
 'Tis to restore with more security 1305
 Rebellion to its ancient purity ;
 And Christian liberty reduce
 To th' elder practice of the Jews :
 For a large conscience is all one
 And signifies the same with none. 1310

It is enough (quoth he) for once,
 And has repriev'd thy forfeit bones :
 Nick Machiavel had ne'er a trick
 (Though he gave his name to our Old Nick)
 But was below the least of these 1315
 That pass i' th' world for holiness.
 This said, the Furies and the light
 In th' instant vanish'd out of sight,
 And left him in the dark alone,
 With stinks of brimstone and his own. 1320

The Queen of Night, whose large command
 Rules all the sea and half the land,
 And over moist and crazy brains,
 In high spring-tides, at midnight reigns,
 Was now declining to the west, 1325
 To go to bed and take her rest ;
 When Hudibras, whose stubborn blows
 Deny'd his bones that soft repose,
 Lay still, expecting worse and more,
 Stretch'd out at length upon the floor ; 1330
 And, though he shut his eyes as fast

As if h' had been to sleep his last,
 Saw all the shapes that fear or wizards
 Do make the devil wear for vizards,
 And, pricking up his ears to hark 1325
 If he could hear toò in the dark,
 Was first invaded with a groan,
 And after, in a feeble tone,
 These trembling words : Unhappy wretch !
 What hast thou gotten by this fetch, 1340
 Or all thy tricks, in this new trade,
 Thy holy Brotherhood o' th' blade ?
 By saunt'ring still on some adventure,
 And growing to thy horse a Centaur ?
 To stuff thy skin with swelling knobs 1345
 Of cruel and hard-wooded drubs ?
 For still th' hast had the worst on't yet,
 As well in conquest as defeat.
 Night is the sabbath of mankind,
 To rest the body and the mind, 1350
 Which now thou art deny'd to keep,
 And cure thy labour'd corpse with sleep.

The Knight, who heard the words, explain'd
 As meant to him this reprimand,
 Because the character did hit 1355
 Point-blank upon his case so fit ;
 Believ'd it was some drolling spright
 That stay'd upon the guard that night,
 And one of those h' had seen, and felt
 The drubs he had so freely dealt ; 1360
 When, after a short pause and groan,
 The doleful Spirit thus went on :

This 'tis t' engage with Dogs and Bears
 Pell-mell together by the ears,
 And, after painful bangs and knocks, 1365

To lie in limbo in the stocks,
 And from the pinnacle of glory
 Fall headlong into purgatory—

(Thought he, This devil's full of malice,
 That on my late disaster rallies ;)—

1370

Condemn'd to whipping, but declin'd it,

By being more heroic-minded ;

And at a riding handled worse,

With treats more slovenly and coarse ;

Engag'd with fiends in stubborn wars,

1375

And hot disputes with conjurers ;

And, when th' hadst bravely won the day,

Wast fain to steal thyself away—

(I see, thought he, this shameless elf

Would fain steal me too from myself,

1380

That impudently dares to own

What I have suffer'd for and done)—

And now, but vent'ring to betray,

Hast met with vengeance the same way.

Thought he, How does the devil know

1385

What 'twas that I design'd to do ?

His office of intelligence,

His oracles are ceas'd long since ;

And he knows nothing of the Saints,

But what some treach'rous spy acquaints.

1390

This is some pettifogging fiend,

Some under door-keeper's friend's friend,

That undertakes to understand,

And juggles at the second-hand,

And now would pass for Spirit Po,

1395

And all men's dark concerns foreknow.

I think I need not fear him for 't ;

These rallying devils do no hurt.

With that he rous'd his drooping heart,

And hastily cry'd out, What art? 1400
 A wretch (quoth he) whom want of grace
 Has brought to this unhappy place.—
 I do believe thee, quoth the Knight;
 Thus far I'm sure thou'rt in the right,
 And know what 'tis that troubles thee 1405
 Better than thou hast guess'd of me.
 Thou art some paltry blackguard spright,
 Condemn'd to drudg'ry in the night;
 Thou hast no work to do in th' house,
 Nor halfpenny to drop in shoes; 1410
 Without the raising of which sum
 You dare not be so troublesome,
 To pinch the slatterns black and blue,
 For leaving you their work to do.
 This is your bus'ness, good Pug-Robin, 1415
 And your diversion dull dry bobbing,
 T' entice fanatics in the dirt,
 And wash 'em clean in ditches for 't;
 Of which conceit you are so proud,
 At ev'ry jest you laugh aloud, 1420
 As now you would have done by me,
 But that I barr'd your raillery.

Sir (quoth the Voice), y' are no such sophi
 As you would have the world judge of ye.
 If you design to weigh our talents 1425
 I' th' standard of your own false balanee,
 Or think it possible to know
 Us ghosts, as well as we do you,
 We who have been the everlasting
 Companions of your drubs and basting, 1430
 And never left you in contest,
 With male or female, man or beast,
 But prov'd as true t' ye, and entire,

In all adventures as your Squire.

Quoth he, That may be said as true 1435
 By th' idlest pug of all your crew :
 For none could have betray'd us worse
 Than those allies of ours and yours.
 But I have sent him for a token
 To your low country Hogen-Mogen, 1040
 To whose infernal shores I hope
 He'll swing like skippers in a rope :
 And if y' have been more just to me
 (As I am apt to think) than he,
 I am afraid it is as true 1445
 What th' ill-affected say of you ;
 Ye've 'spous'd the Covenant and Cause,
 By holding up your cloven paws.

Sir (quoth the Voice), 'tis true I grant,
 We made and took the Covenant ; 1450
 But that no more concerns the Cause,
 Than other perj'ries do the laws,
 Which, when they 're prov'd in open court,
 Wear wooden peccadilloes for 't :
 And that 's the reason Cov'nanters 1455
 Hold up their hands like rogues at bars.

I see (quoth Hudibras) from whence
 These scandals of the Saints commence,
 That are but natural effects
 Of Satan's malice and his sects, 1460
 Those spider-saints that hang by threads
 Spun out o' th' entrails of their heads.

Sir (quoth the Voice), that may as true
 And properly be said of you,
 Whose talents may compare with either, 1465
 Or both the other put together :
 For all the Independents do

Is only what you forc'd 'em to ;
You, who are not content alone
With tricks to put the devil down, 1470
But must have armies rais'd to back
The gospel-work you undertake ;
As if artillery and edge-tools
Were th' only engines to save souls :
While he, poor devil, has no pow'r 1475
By force to run down and devour ;
Has ne'er a Classis, cannot sentence
To stools, or poundage of repentance ;
Is ty'd up only to design
T' entice and tempt and undermine : 1480
In which you all his arts outdo,
And prove yourselves his betters too.
Hence 'tis possessions do less evil
Than mere temptations of the devil,
Which all the horrid'st actions done 1485
Are charg'd in courts of law upon ;
Because, unless they help the elf,
He can do little of himself ;
And therefore where he 's best possest
Acts most against his interest ; 1490
Surprises none but those who 've priests
To turn him out, and exorcists,
Supply'd with spiritual provision,
And magazines of ammunition ;
With crosses, relics, crucifixes, 1495
Beads, pictures, rosaries, and pixes ;
The tools of working out salvation
By mere mechanic operation :
With holy water, like a sluice,
To overflow all avenues : 1500
But those who 're utterly unarm'd,

T' oppose his entrance if he storm'd,
 He never offers to surprise,
 Although his falsest enemies ;
 But is content to be their drudge, 1505
 And on their errands glad to trudge :
 For where are all your forfeitures
 Intrusted in safe hands, but ours ?
 Who are but jailors of the holes
 And dungeons where you clap up souls ; 1510
 Like under-keepers, turn the keys
 T' your mittimus anathemas,
 And never boggle to restore
 The members you deliver o'er,
 Upon demand, with fairer justice 1515
 Than all your covenanting Trustees ;
 Unless, to punish them the worse,
 You put them in the secular pow'rs,
 And pass their souls, as some demise
 The same estate in mortgage twice ; 1520
 When to a legal utlegation
 You turn your excommunication,
 And for a groat unpaid that 's due,
 Distrain on soul and body too.

Thought he, 'Tis no mean part of civil 1525
 State-prudence to cajole the devil,
 And not to handle him too rough,
 When h' has us in his cloven hoof.

'Tis true (quoth he), that intercourse
 Has pass'd between your friends and ours, 1530
 That, as you trust us, in our way,
 To raise your members and to lay,
 We send you others of our own,
 Denounc'd to hang themselves or drown,
 Or, frighted with our oratory, 1535

To leap down headlong many a story ;
 Have us'd all means to propagate
 Your mighty interests of state,
 Laid out our sp'ritual gifts to further
 Your great designs of rage and murder : 1540
 For if the Saints are nam'd from blood,
 We only 've made that title good ;
 And, if it were but in our power,
 We should not scruple to do more,
 And not be half a soul behind 1545
 Of all Dissenters of mankind.

Right (quoth the Voice), and, as I scorn
 To be ungrateful, in return
 Of all those kind good offices,
 I'll free you out of this distress, 1550
 And set you down in safety, where
 It is no time to tell you here.

The cock crows, and the morn draws on,
 When 'tis decreed I must be gone ;
 And if I leave you here till day, 1555
 You'll find it hard to get away.

With that the Spirit grop'd about
 To find th' enchanted hero out,
 And try'd with haste to lift him up,
 But found his forlorn hope, his crup, 1560
 Unserviceable with kicks and blows
 Receiv'd from harden'd hearted foes.

He thought to drag him by the heels,
 Like Gresham-carts with legs for wheels ;
 But fear, that soonest cures those sores, 1565
 In danger of relapse to worse,
 Came in t' assist him with its aid,
 And up his sinking vessel weigh'd.
 No sooner was he fit to trudge,

But both made ready to dislodge ; 2570
 The Spirit hors'd him like a sack,
 Upon the vehicle his back,
 And bore him headlong into th' hall,
 With some few rubs against the wall ;
 Where, finding out the postern lock'd, 1575
 And th' avenues as strongly block'd,
 H' attack'd the window, storm'd the glass,
 And in a moment gain'd the pass ;
 Through which he dragg'd the worsted soldier's
 Fore-quarters out by th' head and shoulders, 1580
 And cautiously began to scout
 To find their fellow-cattle out ;
 Nor was it half a minute's quest
 Ere he retriev'd the champion's beast,
 Ty'd to a pale, instead of rack, 1585
 But ne'er a saddle on his back,
 Nor pistols at the saddle bow,
 Convey'd away, the Lord knows how.
 He thought it was no time to stay,
 And let the night too steal away ; 1590
 But in a trice advanc'd the Knight
 Upon the bare ridge, bolt upright,
 And, groping out for Ralpho's jade,
 He found the saddle too was stray'd,
 And in the place a lump of soap, 1595
 On which he speedily leap'd up ;
 And, turning to the gate the rein,
 He kick'd and cudgel'd on amain ;
 While Hudibras with equal haste
 On both sides laid about as fast, 1600
 And spurr'd, as jockeys use to break,

Or padders to secure, a neck :
Where let us leave 'em for a time,
And to their Churches turn our rhyme ;
To hold forth their declining state,
Which now come near an even rate.

1605

END OF VOL. I.













